Part Two: The Beatitudes in Hebrew and Aramaic

Chapter One

Theological Background of the Beatitudes

Before attempting to reconstruct the Beatitudes into either Hebrew or Aramaic we must first examine the theological context which produced them.

II.1.1 Jesus and the Kingdom of Heaven

After the temptation, Matthew chapter four tells us that Jesus went to Galilee (vs 12) and began to preach: *Repent, for the kingdom of heaven is near* (vs 17). Verse 23 mentions that Jesus preached *the good news of the kingdom*. There is every reason to believe that by this expression Matthew means the Sermon on the Mount (Dupont 1958:319).

II.1.1.1 The Influence of Isaiah 61 on the Beatitudes

The key passage for determining the themes of the Beatitudes is Isaiah 61 (particularly verses 1-3). Numerous commentators have noted the influence of this passage on the Beatitudes. Frankemölle went so far as to say that reference to these verses is obvious and suggests that most exegetes would say the same (Plackal 1988:30). Black traces the popularization of this theory to Zahn (1967:157).

That these verses were of central importance to Jesus is emphasized by Luke when he tells of Jesus’ sermon at the synagogue in Nazareth. Jesus reads this very passage from the Isaiah scroll in the synagogue and declares that it is fulfilled in their hearing. The poor, those who mourn, the broken-hearted, inheriting the earth, righteousness, and abundance of food all find place in Isaiah 61 in a prophetic picture of God reversing the fortunes of his people (Tuckett & Goulder 1983:209).

One of the reasons Flusser gives for supporting the notion that there were originally seven beatitudes is that there are seven infinitives in Isaiah 61.1-3 (Puech 1991:101). Puech agrees, suggesting that a passage in the Thanksgiving Scroll (1QH23.13-16) with
seven infinitives (by way of reconstruction) was written in imitation of Isaiah 61.1-3 (1991:102-103).

II.1.1.2 The Influence of Daniel 7.14-27 on the Beatitudes

The vocabulary and the imagery of Isaiah 61 are used to give expression to a theological context taken from another passage. That passage is Daniel 7.14-27 which deals with the people of God receiving his kingdom. Because the theme of the kingdom of heaven begins and ends the Beatitudes it is more rightly Jesus’ understanding of kingdom which provides the proper backdrop to the formation of these verses.

In the Beatitudes, Jesus combines allusions to Daniel (particularly 7.14-27) and Isaiah 61.1-3 in a song announcing that the time is fulfilled and the kingdom has come. In other words, the Beatitudes comprise a hymn celebrating the arrival of the kingdom. The kingdom theology inherently behind the Beatitudes comes from a Jewish understanding of Daniel seven current in the second-temple period. In that chapter the prophet Daniel has a vision wherein he sees four beasts coming up from the sea. At the end of this vision he sees one like a son of man led to the presence of the Ancient of Days. In verse 14 this son of man is given dominion over all people and nations and this dominion is termed: a kingdom. In the interpretation which ensues it is clear that Daniel understands the son of man to be a figure which represents the people of God who are referred to as the saints of the Most High. Verse 18 states that the saints of the Most High will receive the kingdom and will possess it forever – yes, for ever and ever. This is reinforced again in verses 22 and 27. Though the son of man may originally have been synonymous with the saints of the Most high the Septuagint translators were careful to distinguish the two (Meadowcroft 1995:234). Thus, well before the first century a popular understanding of this section was that it spoke of two distinct things: a group referred to as the holy ones, and a divine/messianic figure called the son of man.

Jesus takes this foundation and builds upon it in the Beatitudes by changing the designation of those who will receive the kingdom from the saints of the Most High to the poor (in spirit) and those who are persecuted because of righteousness. Manson suggested that poor had become synonymous, in the two centuries before Christ, with the
Hebrew word dysix] [pious], which itself was synonymous with saint (Manson 1949:47). These devotees which had accepted the obligations of the kingdom of God were then eligible to inherit the privileges of the kingdom (Manson 1949:47).

The poetic use of κληθήσονται and παρακληθήσονται juxtaposed next to the first and last beatitudes (which mention the kingdom of heaven) respectively also reflects the apocalyptic nature of these sayings. The idea of being called by God certainly had eschatological significance for first-century Jews. For instance, in an apocalyptic text found among the Aramaic documents in the Dead Sea Scrolls, Pseudo-Daniel (4Q246), the term called ones is used synonymously with holy ones in the following line (Eisenman & Wise 1992:68). In addition, in the overwhelming majority of instances where God’s comforting his people is mentioned the context is eschatological.

The concept of the kingdom of God as an inheritance was part of the popular understanding of Daniel 7 in the time of Jesus. In fact, throughout the ages Jewish interpretation of Daniel 7.18 is unanimous in interpreting the words and they will possess the kingdom,¹⁰ as and they will inherit the kingdom. Both Sadia Gaon and the Even Ezra commentary translate this into Hebrew as: twklmh wvryw. Alternatively, the Mtzudat David commentary translates it (presumably as does James) with the words wlxny htwklmh. Interestingly, since this part of Daniel is in Aramaic already, the Peshitta also translates and they will possess the kingdom¹¹ as and they will inherit the kingdom.¹² This shows that the tradition was certainly present when the Peshitta version of Daniel was penned.

II.1.1.3 Evidence from the Dead Sea Scrolls

A number of allusions to Isaiah 61 occur in messianic and eschatological contexts among the Dead Sea Scrolls. But what is more interesting is the fact that we have examples where this is done in combination with allusions to Daniel 7.13-27. An excellent case in

---

¹⁰ at'Wkl.m; !Wns.x.y:w>
¹¹ at'Wkl.m; !Wns.x.y:w>
¹² ) twklml hnwtranw [atwklml hnwtranw]
point is 4Q521. It is entitled by its editor, *Une Apocalypse Messianique* [A Messianic Apocalypse] (Puech 1992: 475), and is a vision of the messianic future. Consider the following lines from fragment one, column two:

\[
\text{d[ twkIm ask l[ ~ydysx ta dbky .7 ~ypwpk qwz ~yrw[ xqwp ~yrwsa rytm .8 rXby ~ywn[ hyxy ~ytmw ~yllx apry za .12 (Eisenman & Wise 1992: 21)}
\]

7. *He will glorify the pious upon the throne of the eternal Kingdom.*
8. *Setting free the prisoners, opening (the eyes of the) blind, raising up the downtrodden.*
12. *Then he will heal the sick and the dead he will cause to live (and to the) poor he will announce the good news.*

In line seven the Hebrew words *d[ twkIm*\(^{13}\) should be taken as a reference to (and translation of) the Aramaic *~l[ twkIm*\(^{14}\) of Daniel 7.27. The mention of announcing good news to the poor in line twelve is an allusion to Isaiah 61.1. Line eight is recognized as an allusion to Psalm 146.7-8 (Puech 1991:103) but the mention of setting prisoners free and the blind receiving sight are also themes from Isaiah 61.1.

4Q521 is especially useful for illustrating the messianic expectations resident in the background of the Beatitudes. There are several unmistakable parallels to the teachings and life of Jesus. For instance, Jesus claims that his ministry is the fulfillment of messianic prophecy when answering the disciples of John who came to ask him if he was the coming one. His reply was (Mt 11.5-6): *the blind receive sight, the lame walk, those who have leprosy are cured, the deaf hear, the dead are raised, and the good news is preached to the poor* (NIV). The similarities between these verses and the lines from 4Q521 above are striking. Jesus specifies various things that

---

\(^{13}\) *eternal kingdom*

\(^{14}\) *eternal kingdom*
are healed, where 4Q521 merely says *he will heal the sick* (though opening the eyes of the blind is mentioned in line eight). Both mention the dead being raised and then follow-up with a reference to Isaiah 61.1 about the poor having the good news preached to them. The likelihood that this is merely coincidence is slim. Rather, both point to a common conflation of messianic prophecies known and accepted by the people of that day.

The publication of 11Q13 gives much greater confirmation that both Isaiah 61 and Daniel 7 played a large roll in the formulation of messianic expectations and theology. It is amidst an allusion to Isaiah 61 that the heavenly figure of Melchizedek appears to establish *a righteous Kingdom* (col 2, line 9). In column 2, line 9, Wise translates as follows: *For this is the time decreed for “the year of Melchiz[edek]’s favor” (Is 61.2 modified), [and] by his might he w[i]ll judge God’s holy ones and so establish a righteous ki[n]gdom* (Wise et al 1996:456). The mention of the judgement of God’s holy ones should be seen as an allusion to Daniel 7.22 which states: *the Ancient of Days came and pronounced judgement in favour of the saints of the Most High, and the time came when they possessed the kingdom* (NIV).

The obvious parallel to Jesus (himself referred to as Melchizedek in Heb 7-8) and his use of Isaiah 61.1-2 in the synagogue at Nazareth (Lk 4.18-21) also makes this scroll extremely valuable for determining the proper understanding of Jesus’ gospel of the kingdom. In 11Q13 lines 15-16 the author quotes Isaiah 52.7 in reference to Melchizedek’s visitation saying that it proclaims the day of salvation. It goes on to say (lines 18-20a), *“The messenger” is the [An]ointed of the spir[it], of whom Dan[iel] spoke, [“After the sixty-two weeks, an Anointed one shall be cut off” (Da 9.26). The “messenger who brings] good news, who announ[ces salvation’] is the one of whom it is wri[tt]en, [“to proclaim the year of the LORD’S favor, the day of vengeance of our God:] to comfo[rt all who mourn” (Is 61.2)]* (Wise et al 1996:457).

The publication of 4Q521 and 11Q13 establishes that the use and interpretation of a combination of Isaiah 61 and Daniel 7 by Jesus was not unusual (particularly in apocalyptic circles). Furthermore, 11Q13 provides evidence that an integral part of
Jesus’ greater message concerning the kingdom of God would have been that the eschatological year of Jubilee had been inaugurated. This he did at the synagogue in Nazareth by quoting Isaiah 61.1-2 and proclaiming that it was fulfilled in their hearing (Luke 4.16-21). With these things in mind one can readily see that the Beatitudes are the announcement of good news by Jesus declaring that the **kingdom of God** had come and that the power and privileges of the age to come were breaking into this world.

It is not only Melchizedek who is linked to Isaiah 52.7 and 61. Moses is described in 4Q377\(^\text{15}\) in language reminiscent of these passages. Among other things, he is called *His (the LORD’S) anointed* (2.2.5), *messenger* (2.2.11), and *herald of good tidings* (2.2.11). Moses is never referred to in the Old Testament by these terms (Wise et al 1996: 338). It is obvious that both Isaiah 52.7 and 61.1 are purposely applied to him by this ancient author. It may be that Moses is linked to the Messianic associations of these scriptures by the promise of a prophet, like Moses who was to come (Dt 18.15). One of the favourite sermons of the early church was that Jesus was this prophet like unto Moses (e.g., Acts 3.22; 7.37). Perhaps, because it was already being applied to Moses, Jesus’ application of Isaiah 61 towards himself was interpreted as a veiled reference to him being the fulfillment of Deuteronomy 18.15.

\section*{II.1.1.4 The Kingdom as an Inheritance}
Paul enjoys utilizing allusions to Daniel 7.18 (cf, Co 1.12; Ep 1.18), but not by way of allusion to the Beatitudes. Rather, he presupposes that his readers understand that the promise of the kingdom in Daniel is to be considered an inheritance. He is able to do this because of the common Jewish understanding of this verse in Daniel, which in due course became the heritage of the early church.

\footnote{A Moses Apocryphon}

\(^{15}\) \textit{A Moses Apocryphon}
It is because there was a general understanding of the kingdom of God as something which may be inherited that Jesus is able to use more prosaic vocabulary interchangeably with words like inherit or inheritance. For instance, in the parable of the wicked tenants (Mt 21.23-44; Mk 12.1-12; Luke 20.9-18) the owner of the vineyard sends his son\(^\text{16}\) to collect what was due.

When the tenants see the son coming they say, “this is the heir, come, let us kill him and possess his inheritance” (Mt 21.38). Here, the use of the verb possess (κατέχω), which is not in Mark or Luke’s version, should be seen as a deliberate hint at the LXX version of Daniel 7.18 and ensures that the audience understands that the inheritance to be possessed is in reality the kingdom of God. This is stated directly in the application of the parable (vs 43): the kingdom of God shall be taken from you, and given to a nation producing its fruits. Matthew’s version parallels the attempt on the part of the wicked tenants to possess the inheritance by force antithetically with God giving his kingdom to faithful servants.

Because both Matthew and Luke use essentially the same wording in their respective beatitudes for the possession of the kingdom by the poor it seems logical that the wording reflects tradition predating either gospel. That Matthew is incorporating material with a strong tradition behind it is also clear from the fact that this idiom contrasts so much with Matthew’s preference for using words like enter (εισέρχομαι) or inherit (κληρονομέω) to describe participation in the kingdom of heaven (cf, Mt 5.20; 23.14; 25.34). The connection between entering and inheriting goes back to the fact that the two terms are commonly used together in the conquest vocabulary of the Pentateuch (e.g, Dt 1.8; 4.1, 5; 6.17-18; 8.1; 16.20). For instance, Deuteronomy 8.1 says, ... follow every command I am giving you today, so that you may live and increase and may enter and possess the land that the LORD promised ... (NIV). Note also the parallelism between the terms live and possess (or inherit) the land. This is especially pertinent to our discussion here as parallelism exists in the first and third beatitudes between land and kingdom. In addition, it should also be noted that entering eternal life is used synonymously with inheriting the kingdom of heaven in Matthew 25.34,46.

---

\(^{16}\) Both Mark, in 12.8, and Luke, in 20.13, use the more pointed designation, beloved son.
Earlier Puech’s suggestion was noted that the third beatitude is a virtual quotation of Psalm 37.11 [οἱ ὃ ἑνεπαρεὶς κληρονομήσουσιν γῆν] to which a definite article has been added [thus: τὴν γῆν] so as not to upset the word count (1991:96). It must also be mentioned that the words κληρονομήσουσιν τὴν γῆν do appear almost immediately before Isaiah 61.1 in the LXX version of Isaiah 60.21. This verse begins: *All your people will be righteous and they will possess the land forever* [καὶ λαός σοι πᾶς δίκαιος καὶ δὲν αἰώνος κληρονομήσουσιν τὴν γῆν]. Isaiah 60.21 is used as a proof text, in Aboth 1.1, to prove that all Israelites will have a portion in the world to come. This does not discount that Matthew 5.5 is a direct reference to Psalm 37.11. But, by the slight change of adding the definite article *OMatthew* has brought Psalm 37.11 into relationship with Isaiah. It should also be remembered that it was *OMatthew* who has added the words δικαιοσύνην in the fourth beatitude. Perhaps this was also inspired by Isaiah 60.21.

II.1.2 The Kingdom is Both Present and Future

The sole reference for Jesus directly speaking of inheriting the kingdom is found in Matthew 25.34. There, in the parable of the Sheep and the Goats, the sheep are told to inherit a kingdom prepared from the foundation of the world. Because inheriting the kingdom is parallel in this story to entering into eternal life (vs 46) it is clear that the world to come is in view. It seems likely that Jesus’ use of inheriting the kingdom reflected the current Jewish understanding of the idiom (cf, Lu 10.25, 18.18). Paul certainly understood that Christians will only inherit the kingdom of God at the resurrection of the dead (1Co 15.50-54; cf, 6.9-10 and Ga 5.21). Yet, in another sense we find Jesus proclaiming that benefits of this inheritance were already freely available. Thus, the early church had a theology of the kingdom of God as an inheritance with benefits which can be experienced not only in the future, but in the here and now. This is emphasized in the way the ancient versions translated the Beatitudes. The Boharic, Coptic version for instance, translates all the Beatitudes in the present tense (Horner [1905] 1969:24).

II.1.2.1 The Analogy of the Parable of the Prodigal Son

The Gospels themselves reflect this dichotomy. In Jesus’ parable of the Prodigal Son (Lk
15.11-32) the theme of being able to enjoy a future inheritance in the present, by virtue of being an heir, is emphasized. With regard to this, the connection between inheritance and the feast in this parable is instructive. Contrary to some interpretations of this parable, the lost son is restored to full rights as an heir at the feast held in his honour. This better explains the reaction of the older son who points out that the younger son has already squandered so much of the inheritance.

The Messianic connotations of a feast would certainly not have been missed by the crowds listening to Jesus. In the story of the Prodigal Son the food of the feast being shared amongst friends is contrasted to the “devouring”17 of the inheritance among prostitutes (vss 29-30). An allusion to food from the Messianic feast would probably have been interpreted, by first-century Jewish-Christians, as an allusion to the benefits from the future time of salvation experienced in the present. The Messianic age was characterized by feasting. Rabbi Akiba (c 120 AD), after speaking of the final judgement says: everything is prepared for (the) feast (Aboth 3.16). Pesikta Rabbathi s 41, in explanation of Israel whom I have called (from Is 48.12) talks of he who is called (i.e., invited) to the feast. Jesus himself several times likened the time of salvation to a feast. In Luke 13.28-29 he declares that the Patriarchs are able to be viewed in the kingdom of God and, in addition, people will come from all directions to recline18 at the feast in the kingdom of God. The use of the verb, ἀνακλίνω, here and elsewhere in the Gospels (the parallel in Mt 8.11 uses the same word) likely indicates that in these sayings Jesus utilizes a common idiom.

II.1.2.2 The analogy of Hebrews 6.4-5

An analogy for theorizing that the primitive Church likened the benefits of salvation to food from the Messianic feast can be garnered from Hebrews 6.4-6a: It is impossible for those who have once been enlightened, who have tasted the heavenly gift, who have shared in the Holy Spirit, who have tasted the goodness of the word of God and the powers of the coming age, if they fall away, to be brought back to repentance. (NIV)

17 Note the use of a word connected to food.
18 ἀνακλίνω
Consider, *those who have tasted the heavenly gift*. This is an obvious reference to the heavenly manna which represents the bread of life (cf, Jn 6.32-33). Jesus said that the true heavenly bread/manna was himself (Jn 6.35). This is parallel to the next phrase *have tasted the goodness of the word of God*.

Last, but certainly not least, the phrase, *the powers of the coming age* would be an unmistakable reference to the life to be experienced at the consummation. The kingdom is then, in the words of Dodd (1936:51), “the impact upon this world of the ‘powers of the world to come.’” Seeing the kingdom of God as an inheritance which was to be distributed by those who received it seems to be an implication in such beatitudes as *blessed are the merciful* and *blessed are the peacemakers*.

Judaism, by the first century had come to distinguish between the time of the world to come and the days of the Messiah. Thus, even today, a blessing from the afternoon service for Sabbaths and festivals petitions God that his will be *that we may inherit happiness and blessing in the days of the Messiah and in the life of the world to come*19 (Singer 1962:235). Thus, though they are connected in apocalyptic thought and are interrelated, the separation of *the world to come* from *the days of the Messiah* would allow the early church to preach that the latter had come to pass even while the former remained a hope for the future.

---

19 aB’h; ~l’A[h’ yYEx;I.W x;yviM’h: tAmy> ynEv.li hk’r’b.W hb’Aj vr:ynIw>
Chapter Two

The Beatitudes in Hebrew and Aramaic

With this background in mind we can now proceed to examine the Beatitudes as they may have appeared in either Hebrew or Aramaic. Numerous Hebrew beatitudes certainly exist. Many appear in the book of Psalms. However, because the Beatitudes in Matthew are apocalyptic in nature, the description in each beatitude of its subjects as *blessed* is influenced not so much by the use of *yrEv.a*; in the Psalms but by its use in Daniel 12.12. There, *yrEv.a*; is used in reference of those who experience the fulfillment of the vision.

One of the big debates regarding the form of the Beatitudes as Jesus would have spoken them is with respect to the difference between the form in Luke, which addresses the hearers in the second person, versus that in Matthew, which uses the third person. Matthew’s form is closer to that of the form of beatitudes in the Old Testament. The form of Luke’s beatitudes with corresponding woes parallels the form of many found in Rabbinic literature. For example, *Berachoth* 61b says:

\[ \text{~yrbd l[ sptnX swppl wl ywa rwt yrbd l[ tsptnv abyq[ ybr $yrXa ~yljb} \]

_Blessed are you, Rabbi Aqiba! For you were seized by the words of the Torah; Woe to Pappus that was seized by vain things._
II.2.1 Poetic Alliteration

As mentioned earlier, Michaelis suggests that the pi-alliteration in the first strophe of four beatitudes attempts to mirror Hebrew poetic alliteration. For instance, she maintains that πενθοῦντες\(^{20}\) and πενθοῦντες\(^{21}\) can be reconstructed as ~ylibea] and ~ybi[er. respectively and that this results in poetic assonance.

Unfortunately an argument from this example is not presented as persuasively as it might have been. Though she is correct that, phonologically, the distinction between a and [ had largely disappeared by this time (Plackal 1988:26) she does not give examples which demonstrate assonance between l and r. But, from Japan to South Africa many language groups struggle to distinguish between the phonological values of r and l. The populace of first-century Palestine also had segments which had the same problem. For instance, where, in Deuteronomy 14.5 Targum Onkelos translates *wild ox* as albrwt Targum Yerushalmi I\(^{22}\) has arb rwt (Jastrow [1903] 1992:1656).

This demonstrates the oral nature of the targums. Obviously, the discrepancy goes back to the fact that these words were pronounced similarly. In Exodus 28.18 Targum Yerushalmi II\(^{23}\) translates *saphire* as anylwmps rather than the more correct anyrypms (Dalman [1905] 1981:101). This phenomenon can also be demonstrated from the way certain Greek words were transliterated into Mishnaic Hebrew. For instance, the word Σίξελος [Sicilian] was rendered as hr"Wqysi by Palestinian Jews (Jastrow [1903] 1992:986). The word ζωμάρυστρον [soup-ladle] was corrupted to !Arj.s.ylim'Az (Jastrow [1903] 1992:387). Conversely, the Aramaic word al'B'r>s; was transliterated into Greek as σαφάραρα (Jastrow [1903] 1992:1022).

\(^{20}\) those who mourn

\(^{21}\) those who mourn

\(^{22}\) Targum Pseudo-Jonathan
The type of alliteration which Michaelis suggests (such as her example of ~\textit{ylibea}) and ~\textit{ybi[er.}) does not depend on the Beatitudes being in Hebrew. Assonance of this type, as a poetic device, was just as often employed in Aramaic. The Peshitta gives plenty of evidence that ancient translators were quick to recognize instances where the original wording may have employed such wordplay.

For instance, in Mark 4.3 Jesus likens the kingdom of God to a grain of mustard seed, which he says is \textit{the smallest of all seeds that are in the earth}. The Peshitta translates \textit{the smallest of all seeds} as: \textit{\textit{Nw} (rz nwhLK nM yh} } \textit{Yrw(z).} \textit{\textit{24}} The assonance between \textit{\textit{Nw} (rz} \textit{25} and \textit{Yrw(z)} \textit{\textit{26}} is striking and must go back to deliberate, assonate phrasing.

Black (1967:165) reconstructs the phrase similarly and suggests that the word \textit{earth} is also part of the poetic assonance: \textit{di kadh zeri' be'ar'a ze'er hu' min kullhon zar'in} \textit{dibe'ar'a}. \textit{\textit{27}} As helpful as this is it must still be pointed out that if alliteration was an important element in the Beatitudes in their Hebrew or Aramaic form it would need more than the examples Michaelis gives to be proved.

\textbf{II.2.2 Burney’s Theory of Three-beat Rhythm}

Burney goes so far as to say that the Beatitudes “exhibit clear indications of composition in rhyme, and (in the main) three-stress rhythm” (1925:165-166). His reconstruction of the Beatitudes into Aramaic is instructive. He transliterated the words into Latin characters and conveniently marked the stressed accents. This is helpful at some points and not so helpful at others. As a result, Burney’s reconstruction has, in this thesis, will sometimes be retroverted into Hebrew characters to help aid discussion. This reconstruction, good as it is, will receive serious reworking in this thesis, but in the meantime, it makes an excellent point of departure.

\textit{\textit{23}} Fragmentary Targum

\textit{\textit{24}} anw[rz !whlk !m yh ayrw[z

\textit{\textit{25}} anw[rz

\textit{\textit{26}} ayrw[z

47
Burney’s Reconstruction of the Beatitudes into Aramaic (1925:166):

1. $ttubehōn mīskënayyā'[beruhtā] dedilehōn malkutā dišmayyā'

2. $ttubehōn demītābbelīn dehinnūn mītnahiliamīn

3. $ttubehōn īnvānayyā dehinnūn yeretūn leʿarʿā

4. $ttubehōn dekapēnīn wesīahāyīn [lesīdkiā] dehinnūn mitmelāyīn

5. $ttubehōn rahimānayyā daʿalehōn hawayīn rahimāyā' 

6. $ttubehōn didkāyīn belībba dehinnūn hiamāyīn lelahā

7. $ttubehōn deʿabedīn šelamā deyītklerōn benōy delahā

8. $ttubehōn dirdiphīn begēn deslīdkīā dedilehōn malkutā dišmayyā'

Though issue may be taken with Burney regarding the wording employed in this reconstruction he aptly demonstrated that a three-stress rhythm was present. Dupont (1969:217) was not completely convinced but felt that the merits of the theory required mention. Both Black (1967:143) and Jeremias (1971:20) accepted that Burney was correct in his theory, not only that these, but that many sayings of Jesus exhibit a rhythmical structure when reconstructed into Aramaic. Jeremias disagreed with Burney’s reconstruction of the Beatitudes but in his own reconstruction he also employs three-stress rhythm (1971:24). Establishing that a three-beat poetic construction existed in the original beatitudes gives a tremendous help in their reconstruction into Hebrew or Aramaic. In fact, once it is recognized that the Hebrew/Aramaic Beatitudes were originally formed with three-stress lines then any proposed reconstruction must accommodate this rhythm.

Burney’s research gives additional confirmation that the words $tīn\ δικαλοσύνην in the fourth beatitude should be regarded as an addition (1925:167). At the same time, Burney also stated that the words $tīn\ πνεύματι in the first beatitude were an addition and not originally present, because this would add a fourth stress to the line (1925:167). But, Burney’s opinion is based on his reconstruction in which the word $mīskēnayyā' [the poor]
receives two stress-acents. A reconstruction which uses a word for *poor* which needs only one stress-accent would leave room open for *in spirit* to be included in the first beatitude.

Burney brought his wealth of knowledge about Semitic poetry into New Testament studies and showed that elements so common to the Writings of the Hebrew Bible are particularly present in the words of Jesus. One key feature to Semitic poetry is the use of a system of rhythmical beats or stressed syllables (Burney 1925:22). The number of unstressed syllables between the stressed ones is irrelevant; the number of stresses a line receives is the important thing (1925:22). Of the various rhythms (i.e., four-beat, three-beat, *kina* rhythm) present in Semitic poetry Burney suggests that three-beat rhythm is the most important.

Jeremias adds two-beat rhythm to the list of rhythms used by Jesus (1971:20). He maintains that Jesus’ use of different rhythms was dictated by the context and audience he was addressing (1971:20). Two-beat rhythm was used to emphasize the central concepts of his message (1971:22). Four-beat rhythm was reserved for material he wanted to teach to his followers (Burney 1925:124). The *kina* rhythm is for such sayings as: warnings, woes, and expressions of strong emotion (Jeremias 1971:27). The three-stress rhythm was employed preferentially by Jesus for proverbs and maxims which needed to be emphasized and is the most frequent rhythm he used (Jeremias 1971:25).

Normally, in Hebrew and Aramaic poetry, each word (excepting monosyllabic particles) receives a stress-accent (Burney 1925:44). Exceptions are governed by complex rules which themselves are riddled with exceptions (Burney 1925:44-62).

Puech (1991:101) emphasizes that the Beatitudes must be studied as units of an ensemble and not as a group of isolated elements of a more or less informal series without order. By comparing the beatitudes in Sirach 14, 4Q525 and Matthew 5.3-10 he discovered that each text not only expresses, in its own manner, the search for divine wisdom but resonates with eschatological purpose (Puech 1991:101). Significantly, Puech has reconstructed a psalm found among the Dead Sea Scrolls (4Q525) which has seven
beatitudes (Viviano 1992:66). He suggests that lists of seven beatitudes was not uncommon within Palestinian Judaism at that time. He also demonstrates this from a proposed reconstruction of a series of beatitudes found in the Thanksgiving Scroll (1QH), 6.13-16 (Puech 1991:90)

II.2.3 Common Vocabulary of the Reconstructions

II.2.3.1 μακάριος

The natural antecedent in Hebrew for μακάριος would, of course, be ῥυ,α, (pl ῥυ βα). Jastrow ([1903] 1992:130) notes that it only occurs in the plural construct. This is true even in cases where the subject is singular (e.g., Midrash to Psalm 84: Happy am I [῾υα:ρα])]. In Aramaic it would be ἀβ’ω. Jastrow ([1903] 1992:521) remarks that ἀβ’ω is often found in plural construct (e.g., yβεω) to translate ῥυ βα; in the targums. Forms with pronomial suffixes abound, as is typical of Aramaic. For instance, in Psalm 1.1 ῥαιAkβεJ [happy is he] is used to translate ῥυ,α,. The Peshitta does the same, using ῥαιAbω. ²⁸

II.2.3.2 ὅτι

With regard to the reconstruction of ὅτι, there are several possibilities in Hebrew. Generally, Hebrew reconstructions of the Beatitudes consider that ὅτι should be regarded as a translation of γίγκι (e.g., Lindsey 1973:XXII). This should be discarded. If a reconstruction using a more Mishnaic Hebrew idiom were suggested ὅτι would be translated by υ,. The Mishnah regularly employs υ, to introduce subordinated clauses (Safrai & Stern 1976, 2:1020). An example of a Hebrew beatitude using υ, can be seen in Bereshit Rabbas 75:

~ymXb ~ykrbtmw #rab ~ykrbtmX ~yqydch ~hyrXa

Happy are the righteous, for they are blessed on earth and blessed in heaven.

²⁸ yhwbwj
Perhaps the earliest Hebrew rendering of the Beatitudes which uses $\text{V}$, is found in the rendering of Matthew 5.5 in the Leiden manuscript ($\text{ms Heb 28}$) of the Shem Tov Hebrew version of Matthew from the middle-ages (all other manuscripts omit this verse): $\text{yrXa} \sim \text{ymX twklm } \sim \text{hlX xwr ylpX}$ (Howard 1995:16). All of the Aramaic versions and reconstructions of the Beatitudes use $\text{D}>$ in place of $\tilde{\text{o}}\text{t}_1$. A reconstruction in Galilean Aramaic would follow suit as it always introduced explanatory and causal clauses by $\text{D}>$ (Odeberg 1939 2:139). The Hebrew and Aramaic reconstructions of each beatitude will therefore consider $\tilde{\text{o}}\text{t}_1$ to be a Greek rendering of either $\text{V}$, or $\text{D}>$ respectively.

A certain amount of evidence for this comes from Polycarp, who in quoting the sixth beatitude ($\text{Phil 2.3}$), changes the wording to make it a command to be merciful, employing $\text{i[na}$ rather than $\tilde{\text{o}}\text{t}_1$: be merciful that ye may obtain mercy.$^{29}$ Both $\text{i[na}$ and $\tilde{\text{o}}\text{t}_1$ are possible Greek renderings of either $\text{V}$, or $\text{D}>$ (Black 1967:76).

$^{29}$ $\text{ελεάτε, ίνα ελεηθῆτε}$
II.2.3.3 αὐτῶν

The word αὐτῶν of the first and last beatitudes is generally reconstructed into Aramaic as !Ahl.yDI. Aramaic has no true independent possessive pronoun (Dalman [1905] 1981:118). This form goes back to Imperial Aramaic which, as evidenced even in Biblical Aramaic (cf, Dan 2.20), formed possessives by using the relative pronoun yDI followed by the preposition | combined with the pronomial suffix (Johns 1963:17). This way of expressing possession is also found in targums Onkelos and Jonathan (Stevenson [1927] 1962:21). The Old Syriac, the Peshitta, the Harclean and Christian Palestinian versions all use !Ahl.yDI. The reconstructions offered by both Burney and Jeremias do so as well. Mitigating against this is the evidence for Galilean Aramaic. Only rarely does Bereshit Rabba utilize forms like !Ahl.yDI for possessives, preferring instead, !Ahd>Dl (Odeberg 1939 2:5). Likewise, !Ahd>Dl is commonly employed in Targum Yerushalmi I30 and II31 (Dalman [1905] 1981:118). In fact, in the Palestinian Talmud and Mishnah this is the preferred form (Stevenson [1927] 1962:21). Dalman suggested that possessive forms such as ylyd [mine] comes from D> + ydly> [that which is to my hand] (Dalman [1905] 1981:118). More modern scholarship understands that the | has become a d through the process of assimilation (Frank 1995:125). Thus, the reconstruction offered for the first and last beatitudes will contain !Ahd>Dl.

---

30 Targum Pseudo-Jonathan
31 Fragmentary Targum
Chapter Three

Blessed are the poor in spirit for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.

Matthew 5.3: μακάριοι οἱ πτωχοὶ τῷ πνεύματι ὃτι αὐτῶν ἐστιν ἡ βασιλεία τῶν οὐρανῶν.

II.3.1. Reconstructing This Beatitude in Aramaic and Hebrew

II.3.1.1 The Apodosis: An Allusion to Daniel 7.18

Unlike the middle six beatitudes which all contain the common formula ὃτι αὐτοὶ + verb, the first and eighth beatitudes have: ὃτι αὐτῶν ἐστιν ἡ βασιλεία τῶν οὐρανῶν. There has been much debate as to what this latter clause means. Does it mean that the kingdom of heaven belongs to the poor/persecuted for righteousness sake or does it mean that the kingdom is made up of such people. Biven, for instance contemptuously calls theirs a “classic mistranslation” and suggests that of these is to be preferred because “we cannot possess the Kingdom” (Biven & Blizzard 1984:120). Young agrees, suggesting that αὐτῶν is to be translated as a partitive genitive, thus giving the translation: for from them is the kingdom of heaven (Young 1995:92). To this can be added the comments of such scholars as Albright and Mann who state, “the best sense here is ‘the Kingdom will consist of such as these’” (Albright & Mann 1981:46).

The dilemma can be solved quite easily by first of all understanding that based on Daniel 7.18 and 22 the kingdom is inherited. Doeve already suggested this, saying: “of the first beatitude the second part of the phrase is: ὃτι αὐτῶν ἐστιν ἡ βασιλεία τῶν οὐρανῶν, which corresponds to Daniel 7.18 ʼ´wgw !ynwyl[ yvydq atwklm !wlbqyw32,” (1953:157).

If a direct reference to Daniel 7 was being made should we not expect to see a verb such as παραλαμβάνω or κατέχω (both used in the LXX of Dn 7.18)? A possible alternative is

32 And the saints of the Most High will receive the kingdom etc.
to see the apodosis of this beatitude as a conflation of Daniel 7.27 with Isaiah 61.7.

After mentioning that the people will have a double inheritance in the land Isaiah 61.7 says that ~h,l' hy<h.Ti ~l'A[ tx;m.fi.\(^\text{33}\) The use of αὐτῶν may reflect the Greek version of Daniel 7.27 where its use in relation to the *kingdom and power and greatness* is ambiguous (Meadowcroft 1995:219). The words ~h,l' hy<h.Ti could account for the αὐτῶν ἔστιν of the first and eighth beatitudes. *Everlasting joy* was indirectly linked with *the kingdom of heaven* through their both being synonymous with *salvation* (cf, Baruch 5.29). It is possible that Jesus paraphrased a combination of Isaiah 61.7 and Daniel 7.27, saying something like: ~h,l' hy<h.Ti ~yim;V'h; tWkl.m;,\(^\text{34}\) but this seems forced.

This brings us back to looking at Daniel 7.18 for help. Dupont spends considerable time (30 pages) comparing the first beatitude to statements, reflected in all three of the synoptic Gospels, Jesus made about becoming like a child in order to enter the kingdom.\(^\text{35}\) (1969:151-181). Though each of the synoptic writers differ in the wording of this pericope each uses the same words to express *for to these belongs the kingdom of God: τῶν γὰρ τοιούτων ἔστιν ἡ βασιλεία τοῦ Θεοῦ*.\(^\text{36}\) The similarity between the words τῶν τοιούτων ἔστιν and αὐτῶν ἔστιν (both: genitive pronoun followed by ἔστιν) is enough to suggest that Dupont is right to see a connection between them.

Of importance with regard to the contention above that the first beatitude contains a reference to Daniel 7.18 is the fact that Mark (10.15) suggests that because the kingdom belongs to *such as these* (children) it is requisite to *receive the kingdom* [δέχηται τὴν βασιλείαν] like a child.

\(^{33}\) *everlasting joy will be theirs*

\(^{34}\) *The kingdom of heaven will be theirs.*

\(^{35}\) Matthew 19.13-14; Mark 10.13-16; Luke 18.15-17

\(^{36}\) Matthew differs only slightly, saying: ἡ βασιλεία τῶν οὐρανῶν [kingdom of heaven].
Dupont (1969:172) maintains that this reflects the Hebrew idiom tWkl.m; wyl[¹ lBeqî ~ylm;V'h; 37]. He draws attention to Daniel 7.18 (although both the LXX as well as Theodotian employ ἀραλαμβάνω rather than δέχομαι for the Aramaic lBeqî; in this verse) noting that Hebrew lBeqî can be just as easily translated into Greek by ἔλαμβάνω or αἴρω as by δέχομαι (Dupont 1969:172).

Perhaps the word αὐτῶν has no particular, allusional purpose and only reflects a common way of speaking about such things. In the Damascus Document (CD 3.20) a promise of eternal life is phrased similarly: ~d"a' dAbK. lk'w> xc;nE yYEx;l. AB ~yqiyzlx]M;h; aWh ~h,l' 38 (Lohse 1971:72). As every student soon learns the use of prepositions in Hebrew are extremely prolific, often implying various words or phrases as the context demands. Here, l. is attached to xc;nE yYEx;, creating an awkward to eternal life. The context suggests that a verb such as receive, enter, or come should be added. Perhaps the preceding word AB is actually a scribal error for aAB. At any rate, it is used synonymously with theirs [~h,l'] further in the line.

Greek ὅτι can be rendered in Hebrew appropriately by the inseparable v,. Aramaic D> can also serve the same purpose. Thus the words ὅτι αὐτῶν in the apodosis of the first and eighth beatitudes will be adequately reconstructed in Hebrew by ~h,l.v, and in Aramaic by !Ahd>Dl.

II.3.1.2 The First Hemistich

As mentioned earlier, the first beatitude’s promise of the kingdom of heaven reflects an allusion to Daniel 7.18. However, the designation of those who are to receive this

37 receive upon himself the kingdom of heaven
38 Those who grow strong in it [i.e., the house of faith] (come) to eternal life and every human glory is theirs.
kingdom has been changed from *the saints of the Most High* to *the poor in spirit*. This idiom appears several times among the Dead Sea Scrolls and is a synonym for *humble* (Dupont 1973:460). It is this idiom in particular that signals that the Greek text in this beatitude is a translation. For a Greek speaking person, πτωχός τὸ πνεῦματι would probably signify *lacking in spirit*.

### II.3.1.2.1 The term Poor in Spirit

#### II.3.1.2.1.a πτωχός = ὡν”'

The LXX uses πτωχός [poor] to translate eight different Hebrew words (Plackal 1988:132). All of these words mean, in some sense, *poor* and theoretically any one of them could be behind the use of πτωχός in the first beatitude. But, if we understand that the vocabulary of the Beatitudes is built around Isaiah 61 then the choice is clear: πτωχός refers to ὡν”’. This word is generally understood to mean *meek* or *humble* (Brown et al [1906] 1999:776). Though ὡν”’ can mean *poor*, in the sense of those who are destitute, this is not its primary meaning.

#### II.3.1.2.1.b An Allusion to Isaiah 61.1

The reference in Isaiah 61.1 to the anointing *to preach good news to the poor* [MT: rFeb; l. ~ywIn”]; LXX: εἰκαὶ ἐγκλήσαναι πτωχοῖς] is what is alluded to here. Ancient Greek speaking Jews seem to have been divided on whether ~ywIn” should be given the meaning *poor* in Isaiah 61.1. For this reason there are manuscripts of the Septuagint (i.e, S and Q) which translate ὡν” in this verse by the word ταπεινός rather than by πτωχός. In like manner, the Epistle of Barnabas (14.9) quotes Isaiah 61.1 using ταπεινός.

One must not think that ancient Israelites imposed too large a distinction between the meanings *poor* and *meek*. The difference between the physically poor and those who are humble towards God was blurry even in biblical times. Psalm 37.11, from which the third beatitude is taken, uses the word *meek* [ὡν”] in parallel to other character qualities of a righteous person throughout the chapter. Perhaps this was why the LXX
used πρεσβύς rather than πτωχός in its translation of Psalm 37.11.

During the exilic and post-exilic periods the concept of the poor evolved into a religious terminology for the righteous (Friedrich 1968:39). Examples of this can be clearly seen in such passages as: Psalms 39.17; 69.5; 85.1; 108.22; Amos 8.4; Ezekiel 16.49; 18.12; 22.29. This mirrors the religious usage of words like mourn, hunger and thirst in the following beatitudes (cf, §II.8.2.1.b).

II.3.1.2.1.c Poor in Spirit Among the Dead Sea Scrolls

The presence of the idiom poor in spirit among the Dead Sea Scrolls is evidence that this was an idiom in use during Second Temple times. For instance, in a passage in the War Scroll (1QM 14.7) we find the people of God called x;Wr ywΕn>[; [poor in spirit]. These individuals are referred to in the same column with such designations as those whose way is perfect, your holy people, the remnant of your people, and Your redeemed. In the Thanksgiving Scroll (14.3) we again find this term applied to God’s people. Typically, the sectarian s at Qumran used this as an expression for themselves (Sekki 1989:122). This does not preclude the possibility that this term was also employed as a designation for the disciples of Jesus (Young 1995:87).

Akin to this idiom are other such expressions as: hw"n"[] x;Wr (1QS 4.3) and rv,Ay x;Wr hw"n"[]w. (1QS 3.8). In the same way that the x;Wr-λp;v., in Isaiah 57.15, are those who have a ~yλiπ'v. x;Wr so too, x;Wr ηwΕn>[; should be understood as those who have a hw"n"[] x;Wr. This idiom also finds its way into the New Testament. Paul seems to have hw"n"[] x;Wr in mind when he speaks of a spirit of meekness in Galatians 6.1 [πνεύματι προφότητος] and I Corinthians 4.21 [πνεύματι τε προφότητος].

39 spirit of humility
40 an upright and humble spirit
41 lowly in spirit
42 spirit of the lowly
It was not only the word $x;W_r$ which was combined with $hwn[\]$. In 4Q525, which has its own collection of beatitudes, we find both $wvPN\ twn[43]$ (2.6) and $qdc\ twn[44]$ (4.20). There does not seem to be any difference between these terms as the emphasis in each case is on humility rather than spirit, soul, or righteousness.

An intriguing combination of the words poor and spirit can be found in 4Q521, which has already been identified as having direct allusions to Isaiah 61. In fragment one, column two, line six we find the words $\@xrt\ wxxr\ ~ywn[\] l[w]$.45

This seems to represent an allusion to Isaiah 61.1’s the spirit of the LORD is upon me combined with an allusion to Genesis 1.2, where the Spirit of God was hovering over the waters. The Talmud (Hag 15a) interprets the use of $\@X;r"$ in Genesis 1.2 as an indication that the Spirit hovered over the waters like a dove that hovers over her young (Jastrow [1903] 1992:1468). This interpretation is intriguing for New Testament scholars. It may indicate that the sign of the Spirit descending on Jesus at his baptism in the form of a dove was seen as a fulfillment of a popular understanding of Isaiah 61.1. This is further affirmed by the use of $\varepsilon\pi\varepsilon\upsilon\tau\omicron\nu$ in Matthew 3.16, as opposed to Mark’s $\varepsilon\iota\zeta\upsilon\upsilon\tau\omicron\nu$ (Mk 1.10), which may have been influenced by the $\varepsilon\pi\varepsilon\upsilon\xi\mu\epsilon$ (LXX) of Isaiah 61.1a (Robinson 1992:387).

But this does not solve the problem raised in chapter five of the first section (see §I.5.1) of whether Jesus said blessed are the poor in spirit or blessed are the poor. All it does is prove that the former idiom did exist in Palestine at the time of Jesus. At Qumran the term poor in spirit never became a technical term distinguished from poor. Both are used for designations of the community as well as in contrast to those who are proud (Jeremias 1971:112-113).

43 humility of his soul
44 humility of righteousness
45 And over the poor will his spirit hover.
II.3.2.1.d  \textit{x;Wr yw\text{In}'<x;Wr-hken>W ynl'}

It has been suggested that \textit{x;Wr yw\text{In}'=} as found among the Dead Sea Scrolls is an abbreviation of \textit{poor and contrite in spirit} [\textit{x;Wr-hken>W ynl'}] found in Isaiah 66.2 (Lindsey 1973:XXIII). For this theory to work it is necessary for the words \textit{wn'} and \textit{ynl'} to be considered interchangeable. There is evidence that they were (Young 1995:93). The only difference, orthographically, between \textit{wn'} and \textit{ynl'} is that the former ends in a \textit{vav} and the latter ends in a \textit{yod}. It might be thought inevitable that there would have been some confusion between them in the Hebrew manuscript tradition (e.g., Pr 14.21: \textit{kethib} \textit{\sim yyl\text{In}'}; \textit{qere} \textit{\sim yw\text{In}'}). Thus both are able to be translated either as \textit{poor} or \textit{humble} (Brown et al [1906] 1999:776). Targum Jonathan uses \textit{lt'w>n>[i} to translate both \textit{wn'} in Isaiah 61.1 and \textit{ynl'} in Isaiah 66.2. This would suggest that Aramaic speakers recognized no difference between the words \textit{wn'} and \textit{ynl'}.

As noted above, \textit{hw'n'} \textit{x;Wr} (noted above as having been found at Qumran) may be reflected in the term \textit{spirit of meekness} in Galatians 6.1 and I Corinthians 4.21. The Peshitta translates this term in both these passages as \textit{)t\text{KYKM }Xwrb}.\textsuperscript{46} This suggests that the translator may have been thinking of this as a reference to Isaiah 66.2 where \textit{x;Wr-hken> } is similarly translated as \textit{)Xwr\text{ KYKM} }.\textsuperscript{47}

Still, this begs the question: what would an allusion to Isaiah 66.2 be doing in a context devoted to Isaiah 61? A possible connection between these two passages can be found in the Thanksgiving Scroll (1QH) where \textit{\sim yw\text{In}'} is used in a direct allusion to Isaiah 61.1:

1QH 18.14

\texttt{hk'y\text{m},x]r: b\text{ArI. }\sim yw\text{In}' r\texttt{Feb;I}.}

\textsuperscript{46} atkykm axwrb
\textsuperscript{47} axwr $\text{Ykm}$
to announce the good news to the poor of the abundance of your mercies.

Unfortunately the next line is not complete but the theme of Isaiah 61 is still in view:

1QH 18.15

~l'A[ tx;m.fil. ~ylibea]w: x;Wr yae[ ]

[ ] spirit and those who mourn to everlasting joy

The gist of this passage seems to be that those who mourn as well as the [ ] in/of spirit are going to be given everlasting joy. The reference to everlasting joy is an allusion to Isaiah 61.7 which, in speaking of God’s people, says that everlasting joy will be theirs.48

It is impossible to be sure of the word preceding spirit but a possibility is that this should be restored as *yaken>* [contrite] (using an alternative spelling not at all unusual at Qumran; cf, 1QM 11.10 which uses this very spelling) and is a reference to Isaiah 66.2. If it can be accepted that conflation of Isaiah 61.1 and 66.2 was not unusual in first-century Judaism, then substituting the words *x; Wr ywEn>*[; for ~ywIn"] would not affect the allusion to Isaiah 61.1.

II.3.1.2.1.e Conflation in Jewish Beatitudes

Conflation of two or more biblical texts in a single passage is not uncommon in the New Testament. For example, in Matthew 3.17 the voice of God at the baptism of Jesus says: *This is my Son, whom I love; with him I am well pleased* (NIV). This is understood to be a conflation of Psalm 2.7, and Isaiah 42.1 (Jeremias 1971:53). This follows the rabbinic method called *remez* [hinting] in which whole passages of scripture were brought to mind by the use of significant words or phrases (Jastrow [1903] 1992:1482).

A good illustration of how conflation can be used in a beatitude so that the original allusion is not lost, but is enhanced, can be seen among a collection of beatitudes found at Qumran (4Q525 fr 2, co 2, l 11) which begins with a paraphrase of Psalm 15.2b-3a. Puech

48 ~h,l' hy<h.Ti ~l'A[ tx;m.fi

49 zm,r<
restores this to read:


Blessed is the one who speaks truth with a pure heart and does not slander with his tongue.

Psalm 15.2b-3a in the Masoretic Text reads:

Anvol.-l[; lg:r"-aOl Abb'l.Bi tm,a? rbeOdw>

who speaks the truth from his heart and has no slander on his tongue (NIV)

The most interesting difference between the two is that the Qumran text says rwhj blb\textsuperscript{50} instead of wbblb.\textsuperscript{51} It shows that conflation (probably with Ps 51.12\textsuperscript{52}) can occur without damaging the original allusion.

That this kind of thing also takes place in the Beatitudes of Matthew only shows that, in style, they are typical examples of the teachings, statements, and aphorisms common in ancient Judaism. This has a direct bearing on the use of $x;Wr$ ywEn>[: in a context where $\sim$ywln\"[] would be expected. If indeed $x;Wr$ ywEn>[: stands behind πτωχοὶ τῷ πνεῦματι in Matthew 5.3 it is only a Hebrew speaker who would have recognized an allusion to both Isaiah 61.1 and 66.2. A Greek speaking Jew, conversant with the Septuagint, might have made the connection with Isaiah 61.1 but not 66.2. The Septuagint version of Isaiah 66.2 translates $x;Wr$-hken>W ynl[, not as πτωχοὶ τῷ πνεῦματι, but as τὸν ταπεινὸν καὶ ἡρῴχουν. Significantly, the only examples of poor in spirit among the Dead Sea Scrolls are in Hebrew and not Aramaic. The Aramaic word $!twn$ is used often enough but not in conjunction with the word spirit. Only a Hebrew

\textsuperscript{50} with a pure heart

\textsuperscript{51} in his heart

\textsuperscript{52} Psalm 51.12 says: Create in me a clean heart, O God, and renew a right spirit within me (NIV). In this case pure/clean heart stands for rAhj'-ble just as in 4Q525. This is not to be confused with Psalm 24.3b-4a which says: Who may stand in his holy place? He who has clean hands and a pure heart. In this case the idiom is bb'le-rB\textsuperscript{52}; See §II.8.2.3.
The speaker would equate *poor* with *poor in spirit*.

### II.3.1.2.1.f Poor > Poor in Spirit

The preponderance of evidence in favour of the first beatitude originally being *blessed are the poor* is too great to ignore. The fact that Isaiah 61.1 is behind the first beatitude is the most important reason. The authors of the Qumran texts, when alluding to Isaiah 61.1, always seem to use \( \sim\text{ywn} \) without complement rather than \( \text{xwr ywn} \) (Dupont 1969:215).

The New Testament writers themselves seem to only know a version without the addition of the word *in spirit*. Luke certainly does. It seems unlikely that Luke (who emphasizes the role of the Spirit so much) would have changed *poor in spirit* to *poor*. The original wording must have been *blessed are the poor* which gives a clear allusion to Isaiah 61.1.

Ironically, the gospel of Matthew also gives evidence for an original beatitude for the *poor* rather than the *poor in spirit*. As mentioned earlier, in Matthew 11.1-6 the disciples of John come to Jesus asking him (vs 3) if he is *the one who was to come* or not. Jesus’ answer to them (Mt 11.4-6) consists of a list of the various kinds of ministry he was doing couched in terminology representing a conflated version of Isaiah 61.1-3. The list concludes with the words \( \text{εὐαγγελίσασθαι πτωχοὶ} \) [the poor are evangelized]. This is not only a reference to Isaiah 61.1 but to the beginning of the Sermon on the Mount: \( \text{μακάριοι οἱ πτωχοί} \) (Robinson 1992:366). The fact that the expression \( \text{πτωχοὶ τῷ πνεύματι} \) does not occur in Matthew 11.5, which only employs \( \text{πτωχός} \), is possibly a clue that the author (or his source) is uncomfortable with this term as an allusion to Isaiah 61.1. If this idiom is present in the first beatitude as the result of the author’s own sensibilities one would expect him to consistently place the same words in another passage which also alludes to Isaiah 61.

In addition to this, the testimony of the *Gospel of Thomas*, Polycarp and the Pseudo-Clementine writings make a very strong case against the words *in spirit* being a part of
the original tradition. Yet, these words must have been added before the first beatitude was translated into Greek. This leads to two conclusions: 1.) Jesus originally said *Blessed are the poor*; 2.) *Matthew* knows a Hebrew version addressed to the *poor in spirit*.

**II.3.1.2.2 The First Hemistich in Aramaic**

Burney’s (1925:166) reconstruction of this beatitude reads: *tiubehón miskenayyá dedilehón malkutá dišmayyá*. Issue can be taken with the choice of *aY"n:Kes.mi* to represent *πτωχοί* [the poor]. In this he is merely following the Syriac versions.

Certainly *!Kes.mi* is a perfectly good word which means *a poor man* (Jastrow [1903] 1992:807). However, the allusion to Isaiah 61.1 demands the use of *aY"n:t'w>n>[i*. Other than that his reconstruction is perfectly acceptable. Substituting *aY"n:t'w>n>[i* for *aY"n:Kes.mi* in an Aramaic reconstruction results in: *aY"m;v.Dl at'Wkl.m; !Ahd>Dl aY"n:t'w>n>[i !AhybeWj*. In accordance with Burney’s theory of a three beat poetic pattern this reconstruction also has two stichs with three stresses each.

**II.3.1.2.3 The First Hemistich in Hebrew**

**II.3.1.2.3.a Blessed are the Poor**

A Hebrew reconstruction patterned on the same idea might read *~h,l.v, ~ywIn"[]h' yrEv.a; ~yIm;V'h; tWkl.m*. This also has the three-beat rhythm Burney proposes.

**II.3.1.2.3.b Blessed are the Poor in Spirit**

53 *aymvd atwk'l !whlydd aynksm !whybwj

54 *tiubehón ìnwetánayyá dedilehón malkutá dišmayyá*

55 Consideration of *~ywIn"[]h* as a word with two stresses is based on the fact that the Rabbinic Bible (as opposed to *Biblia Hebraica*) gives *~ywIn"[]* two stresses when an inseparable prefix is added to it (e.g., Ps 37.11: *~ywIn"[]w*; Pr 3.34: *~ywIn"[]*;w>).
Ironically, if the words in spirit (patterned after \textit{x;Wr ywEn>[;};  found in 1QM 14.7) were present in a Hebrew version the situation changes. Thus, \textit{x;Wr ywEn>[;} yrEv.a;} has only two stresses. In order to allow for the extra needed stress a definite article must be added, resulting in: \textit{x;Wrh' ywEn>[;} yrE.v.a;} . It must be admitted, however, that no form corresponding to \textit{x;Wrh' ywEn>[;} has been found thus far among the Dead Sea Scrolls. This may be considered only a minor problem. The variety of expressions using both \textit{x;Wr} and \textit{wn"[} at Qumran suggests that there was no fixed form of idiom. Having said that, all the forms of this expression which exist, as stated earlier, are in Hebrew. Therefore, the most likely scenario is that the version of the first beatitude presented by Matthew represents a Hebrew version as there is, as yet, no analogy for the idiom poor in spirit in Aramaic.

\textbf{II.3.1.2.3.c Blessed are the Poor of the Earth}

There seems to have been another Hebrew version of the first beatitude competing with blessed are the poor in spirit. James is acquainted with it. This can be seen by examining James 2.5:

\begin{quote}
'Ακούσατε, ἀδελφοί μου ἀγαπητοί, οὐχ ὁ θεὸς ἔξελέξατο τοὺς πτωχοὺς τῷ κόσμῳ, πλούσιους ἐν πίστει καὶ κληρονόμους τῆς βασιλείας ἢς ἐπηγγέλατο τοῖς ἀγαπώσιν αὐτὸν.
\end{quote}

\textit{Listen, my brothers: Has not God chosen those who are poor in the eyes of the world to be rich in faith and to inherit the kingdom he promised those who love him?} (NIV)

The allusion to the first beatitude is apparent by the reference to the poor inheriting the kingdom. As mentioned earlier, James is interpreting the possession of the kingdom by way of Proverbs 8.21 (see: §I.5.1.4).

Additionally, by saying that the poor are rich in faith, James makes an intentional play on the Hebrew words \textit{rv,a;} [\textit{blessed}] and \textit{ryvi['} [\textit{rich}]. This same pun can be found in
Avot 4.1 where the tannaitic rabbi, Simon ben Zoma answers the question of who is rich [ryvi'] by saying that it is those who are blessed [yrEv.a;]. Presumably, this pun was common enough that ben Zoma’s application of it was not considered unusual.

It must be pointed out that James’ use of the same pun is evidence for a Hebrew version of the first beatitude in oral form. The play on words between rv,a; [blessed] and ryvi'[rich] could not be made from a written version. It is only because many Jews (particularly in Galilee) in first-century Palestine did not distinguish between the pronunciations of a and [ (Erub 53b) that the pun is possible. But, the difference between the Hebrew beatitude known by Matthew and the one James is acquainted with is revealed by the fact that James speaks not of the poor in spirit, but rather the poor in the world [poor in the world [πωξον. των κόσμων]. This term seems to represent the Hebrew term #r<a' ywEn>[/poor of the earth] and is a reference to Isaiah 11.4. This same term is found among the Dead Sea Scrolls (in an allusion to Is 11.4) in 1QSb 5.22. Isaiah 11 is filled with important messianic prophecies and would have been very easy to link to Jesus’ message of the arrival of the kingdom.

Someone might argue that the Hebrew word #r<a, would rather have been translated into Greek by the word γῆς instead of κόσμος. The legitimacy of suggesting that κόσμος was commonly used as a translation of #r<a, in the early Church can be demonstrated from Romans 4.13:

*It was not through law that Abraham and his offspring received the promise that he would be heir of the world [κόσμος], but through the righteousness that comes by faith (NIV).*

---

56 Ben Zoma gives a series of aphorisms based on word play with scriptures to answer the rhetorical questions of who is wise, who is mighty, who is rich and who is honoured. Yet, it is only his answer to the question who is rich which also receives an eschatological interpretation. The text reads: x;meF'h; ryvi' Whz<yaε aB'h; ~'l'A[ll] %l' bAjw> hZ<ch; ~'l'A[ll] 'yr<ν.a; %l' bAjw> 'yr<ν.a; lkeato yKi ^yP,K; [yglyy> rm:a/N<ν, Aql.x.B. (Singer 1962:264-265) [Who is rich? He who is happy with his portion, as it is said: You will eat the labour of your hands, happy are you, and (may it be) well with you (Psalm 128.2); happy are you in this world, and it will be well with you in the world to come.]
This is an allusion to Genesis 15.7 in which God tells Abraham that he has brought him from Mesopotamia HT\'v.rll. taZoh; #r<a'h'-ta, ^l. tt,l'.57

*OMatthew’s* version of the beatitude for the *poor* has added the word x;Wrh', creating an allusion to Isaiah 66.2. The version James knows has added #r<a'h' thus making this an allusion to Isaiah 11.4. His version of the first beatitude reads: ~h,l.v, #r<a'h' ywEn>[; yrEv.a; ~ylm;V'h; tWkl.m;].58

Perhaps Tatian was also aware of a Jewish-Christian tradition linking the first beatitude with Isaiah 11.4. The Diatessaron version, followed by all the Syriac versions, translates the word πτωχοί by ]nksm.59 This word is found in the Peshitta version of Isaiah 11.4, which in turn mirrors the Targum, which uses !ynlyKes.mi. It must be admitted that in each case the word being translated is the Hebrew word ~yLiD; [poor]. Neither the Peshitta nor the Targum translate the word ~ywln" in Isaiah 11.4 directly.60 The Septuagint has: ταπεινοίς τῆς γῆς [humble of the earth], meaning that the allusion in James 2.5 does not come from the Greek speaking Jewish environment.

**II.3.1.3 The Original Beatitude**

What conclusions may be drawn from this investigation so far? The fact that there were at least two competing Hebrew versions of this beatitude is perhaps an indication that the original beatitude was in Aramaic. As mentioned in the introduction, it was not unusual to take the Aramaic words of a rabbi and remember them in Hebrew. But, it must be admitted that at this point in the investigation the original language of the Beatitudes

57 *to give you this land to take possession of it* (NIV)
58 *Blessed are the poor of the earth for theirs is the kingdom of heaven.*
59 anksm
60 Hebrew: #r<a'-ywEn>[]. [to the poor of the earth]

Targum: a[\r>a;D> am'][; ykeyvix]m; [the needy of the people of the earth]
remains in doubt. The version of the first beatitude in Luke, *blessed are the poor*, could just as easily reflect a Hebrew saying as it could an Aramaic one. Matthew’s *poor in spirit* shows a greater likelihood of being a translation from Hebrew but this conclusion is far from certain.

It seems reasonable to think that Luke and Matthew each utilize a different source tradition for their versions of the Beatitudes. Wrege suggested this a generation ago but from the standpoint that they utilized pre-literary traditions (Dupont 1969:15). The evidence from James suggests that there was no written Hebrew version of the beatitudes in the beginning of the second half of the first century. A fluid state of oral tradition for this beatitude accounts for the fact that Luke, Matthew and James each know a version different from one another.

II.3.1.4 Hebrew and Aramaic Reconstructions

**Hebrew**

\[\text{~ylm;} V'h; tWkl.m; ~h,l.v, x;'Wrh' ywEn>[; yrev.a;\]

**Aramaic**

\[aY"m;v.Di at'Wkl.m; !Ahd>Di aY"n"t;w}n>[i !AhybeWj\]

II.3.2 The Meaning of this Beatitude

II.3.2.1 *The Poor in Spirit*

Because the term *poor in spirit* is an allusion to Isaiah 66.2 it must be understood as an idiom for *humble*. It would not particularly be distinguished from the word *poor* and could just as easily be applied towards those who were physically destitute. *Poor in spirit* is used with the meaning of *discouraged* in 1QM 14.7.

II.3.2.2 Receiving the Kingdom of Heaven

The word *kingdom* should not be thought of in the sense of a spatial territory, but rather, with the understanding of *rule* or *reign*. The kingdom of God is also to be understood in

Peshitta:  ṭaḥy'yl y̱ṣaḥ [a-ra haXybl; to the wicked? of the earth]
an active way. At Qumran, the concept of God being king is equated with his acting on behalf of his people. The War Scroll states (1QM 6.6):

\[
hkwlmh\ larfy\ lal\ htyhw\ lyx\ hf[y\ wm[\ yvwdqbw
\]

\[And\ the\ kingdom\ will\ belong\ to\ the\ God\ of\ Israel\ and\ among\ the\ holy\ ones\ of\ his\ people\ he\ will\ do\ mighty\ acts.\]

Receiving a kingdom, as expressed in the Beatitudes, then implies not just position but authority which is actively put to use. This can be amply illustrated (in a negative way) from Revelation 17.12:

\[The\ ten\ horns\ you\ saw\ are\ ten\ kings\ who\ have\ not\ yet\ received\ a\ kingdom,\ but\ who\ for\ one\ hour\ will\ receive\ authority\ [\varepsilon\varepsilon\omicron\omicron\omicron\alpha]\ as\ kings\ along\ with\ the\ beast\ (NIV).\]

In this verse the authority of the beast is not diminished by the fact that the ten horns are also kings. In the same way, the early church understood that each believer has been made a king (and priest) and given kingly authority under the kingship of God. This is beautifully expressed in Revelation 5.10 where in the midst of a song of praise and glory to the Lamb it is said that you have made us, to our God, kings and priests and we shall reign upon the earth.

II.3.2.3 How is this Beatitude to be Understood?

It is quite common to explain this beatitude as addressed to those who know they are spiritually poor (TEV). Though this is not untrue the spiritual application of the term poor in spirit belongs to its “hidden” meaning. The people being addressed directly are those who are primarily the physically poor and destitute, but also to those who are humble. The term poor in spirit is used analogous to the way the word blind is used both for those who are physically blind and for those who are spiritually blind (Jesus came to give sight to both). To suggest that the addition of the word spirit causes this term to mean spiritually poor is to impute to Hebrew speakers concepts more at home in Greek. Jesus and his disciples would have understood the words in a more ambiguous sense; one recognising no dichotomy between poor and humble.

In so far as people have recognized in this beatitude a call to humble themselves before
God then they have (often by instinct) gotten the “hidden” meaning of this beatitude – “for him who has ears to hear.”
Chapter Four

Blessed are those who mourn for they shall be comforted

Matthew 5.4: μακάριοι οἱ πενθοῦντες ὅτι αὐτοὶ παρακληθοῦνται

II.4.1 Reconstructing this Beatitude into Aramaic and Hebrew

Throughout the research the easiest beatitudes to link with Isaiah 61 have been the first (of the poor) and this one. The allusion, here, to Isaiah 61.2 is so obvious that it is unmistakable (Betz 1995:124), because one of the tasks of the anointed one is ~xen;l. ~ylibea]-lK'.

This is rendered in the Septuagint as: παρακαλέσαι πάντας τούς πενθοῦντας. In verse three Isaiah shows he is not generically referring to all who are grieving from personal loss by using the more specific term !AYci ylebea]. One must look to Isaiah 61.2 to find not only the vocabulary for this beatitude but also the background for understanding it.

II.4.1.1 The Aramaic Reconstruction

The Aramaic wording for the reconstruction of this beatitude should have been easy to work out. The problem comes with finding a reconstruction which also keeps the three-stress rhythm Burney advocates. His Aramaic solution, tiubahón demit'abbelín dehinnún mitnahhi'āmin, has a problem. No other Aramaic version uses lyliB.a;t.mi to translate πενθοῦντες. For Matthew 5.4 the Old Syriac and Peshitta use \( \text{LYB} \), the Harclean and Christian Palestinian versions use \( \text{LYB} \). These would only receive one stress.

Help comes from Targum Jonathan’s version of Isaiah 61.2: aY"l;bea] lK'

---

61 to comfort all who mourn
62 mourners of Zion
63 !ymixjn;t.mi !WNhid. !yliB.a;t.mi. !AhybeWj
64 alyba
am'x'n:l. In this version the Hebrew word ~ylibea] is translated into Aramaic as aY"l;bea]. This word would receive the necessary two stresses to be used in a reconstruction keeping to a three-stress rhythm.

The reconstruction of παρακληθῆσονται by !Wmx]n:t.yl receives support from the Christian Palestinian version, which has nwMXNt.y.66

II.4.1.2 The Hebrew Reconstruction

The Hebrew word ~ylibea]h' receives two stresses (i.e., ~y)libea])h') and therefore no problems with the poetic rhythm are encountered in the first half of this reconstruction. The second half is a bit more problematic.

The word παρακληθῆσονται needs to be reconstructed using a passive form of the verb ~x;n". Three different constructions are used to express a passive meaning with this verb in Mishnaic Hebrew: Nip"h'al (~x;nl), Hithpa'el (~xen:t.hi), and the Nithpa'el (~xen:t.nl) (Jastrow [1903] 1992:895).

In the sectarian scrolls found at Qumran it is generally the Nip"h'al of ~x;n" which was employed to express to be comforted. For instance, in the Thanksgiving Scroll (1QH 17.13) we find: !Av. arl [v;P, l[; hm'x]N"a,w> [v;]T;v.a, tAxyliS.b;W ynlT;m.x;nl yt;AqWcb.W67 (Lohse 1971:146). However, a reconstruction of ortioni παρακληθῆσονται which reads Wmx;yyl ~h,v, would not work well because this wording only contains two beats.

65 !lylyba
66 !wmxnty
67 In my distress You have comforted me, and in forgiveness I delight. I will be comforted over earlier sin.
The passive use of ~x;n" in Biblical Hebrew is not common. When this verb is found in the Niph'al or Hithpa'el constructions the meaning can just as easily be active or reflexive rather than passive (Brown et al [1906] 1999:636-637). This verb appears in the Pu'al construction (~x;nu) only twice in the Masoretic Text (Brown et al [1906] 1999:637). Both of these instances occur in Isaiah (i.e., 54.11 and 66.13).

II.4.1.2.1 A Conflation of Allusions to Isaiah 61 and Isaiah 66

The fact that a passive form of ~x;n" can be found in Isaiah 66 is intriguing given the fact that appeal has already been made to Isaiah 66.2 in the Hebrew reconstruction of the preceding beatitude. It may be that the translator of the Aramaic Beatitudes into Hebrew desired to couple the allusion to Isaiah 61 with Isaiah 66, not just because of the similarity between wn"[ and ynl'[, but because of the promise in Isaiah 66.13 to those who mourn over Jerusalem: Wmx'nuT..69

As mentioned in the previous chapter, combining allusions to both Isaiah 61 and 66 was not unusual in apocalyptic circles. An example from the Dead Sea Scrolls analogous to this use of both Isaiah 61 and 66 in the first two beatitudes can be garnered from 4Q434. Frag. 1 Col. 1 line 1 reads: hwn[ hlba l[ ~xnhl.70 This should be considered an allusion to Isaiah 61.1-3. It is then tied to an allusion to Isaiah 66.13 in the sixth line which says: as a man whose mother will comfort him, so He will comfort them over Jerusalem.

68 One interesting Biblical use of the verb ~x;n" in the Hithpa‘el construction occurs in Psalm 119.52: yTir>k;z” ~x’n< t.a,w” hwhy ~l’A[me ^yj,P’v.mi. Though ~x’n< t.a, should properly be translated in a reflexive sense the fact that ~x;n" in this binyan shifted by New Testament times to mean be comforted probably allowed interpreters to read and understand this verse as: I will remember your ancient judgements (against the unrighteous) LORD and I will be comforted. This seems to be the understanding of Targum Jonathan which translates this verse as: tymex’n.t.a,w> yy am’l.; lmi %yln”yDl tyrIk.d.ai. Ancient rabbis concurred. For instance, Even Ezra comments that yTir>k;z” means NEFOL NJDGB ŠJZSZ NJIUZO. Similarly, the Mtzudat David commentary says: NMFOC FMBXJZ JŠSDJ JL NJDGE ŠWME ’CAD MS NHQHA EGB.

69 you will be comforted

70 to be comforted over her mourning; her poverty
As mentioned above, Isaiah 66 uses the verb \( \~x;\nu \) in connection with *those who mourn* \([\~yliB.a;t.Mih;]\) (66.10). A reconstruction of this beatitude using forms suggested by Isaiah 66, verses 10 and 13 would result in: \( Wmx'nyu. \sim h,v, \sim yliB.a;t.Mih; yrEv.a; \).

In this reconstruction the \( \sim ylibea \) of Isaiah 61.2 has been substituted by the \( \sim yliB.a;t.mi \) of Isaiah 66.10. Making this change poses no threat to the poetic rhythm since the required three beats are still present. The use of the *Pu’al* form: \( Wmx'nuy > \) is suggested by Isaiah 66.13. This last form would be in agreement with Hebrew versions of this beatitude as ancient as Shem Tov’s (Howard 1995:16), and as modern as Lindsey’s (1973:XXII). This wording brings us back to Burney’s original suggestion: \( !WnhiD> !yliB.a;t.mi. !AhybeWj !ymix\]n:t.mi. \) He never mentions the possible conflation of allusions to Isaiah 61 with Isaiah 66 but \( !yliB.a;t.mi \) is found in the Targum to Isaiah 66.10 and \( !Wmx\]n:t.Ti \) is used to render \( Wmx'nuUT. \) in 66.13.

There are two problems with this reconstruction however. Firstly, by rendering \( \~yliB.a;t.Mih; \) the allusion to Isaiah 61.2 is so altered as to be unrecognizable. It seems much more logical to suppose that \( \sim ylibea \) is the correct reconstruction. There is also a problem with using \( Wmx'nuy > \) in the Hebrew reconstruction of this beatitude. The three-beat rhythm cannot be maintained in the apodosis with \( Wmx'nuy > \sim h,v, \) which would only receive two beats.

**II.4.1.2.2 Defending the Allusion to Isaiah 66.13**

The theory that allusion is being made to Isaiah 66.13 is still viable. There is a variant in the Isaiah Scroll from Qumran (1QIs\(^a\)) to the wording of this verse in the Masoretic Text. Instead of the *Pu’al* form, \( wmxnt \), this scroll uses the *Hithpa’el* and reads \( wmxntt \).
From this it is possible to suggest a Hebrew reconstruction reading: ~h, v, ~yliba]ih' yrEv.a Wmx'n<t.yl;]. This gives the needed three-beat rhythm in each half.

Any objection that the switch from the second person form in Isaiah 66.13 to the third person in this beatitude would negate the proposed allusion, must be discounted. In each case it is God who comforts and this “bottom line” allows enough flexibility for the allusion to remain unaffected. A comparison between Isaiah 66.13 and the allusion to this verse in 4Q434 1.1.6 mentioned above can illustrate this.

Isaiah 66.13: Wmx'nUT. ~il;v'WrybiW ~k,m.x,n:a] ykinoa' !Ke WNm,xjn:T. AMai rv,a] vyaiK.

As a man whose mother comforts him, thus will I comfort you and over Jerusalem you will be comforted.

4Q434 1.1.6: ~lXwryb ~mxny !k wnmxnt wma rXa Xyak

As a man whose mother comforts him, thus he will comfort them over Jerusalem.

4Q434 condenses and abbreviates Wmx'nUT. ~il;v'WrybiW ~k,m.x,n:a]71 to ~lXwryb ~mxny.72 The active promise in the first person (~k,m.x,n:a]) and the passive promise in the second person (Wmx'nUT.) are combined in an active promise in the third person and a pronominal suffix (~mxny). This is instructive for it shows that the allusion is guided by the main verb regardless of person if the result is the same.

Employing Wmx'n<t.yl rather than Wmx'nUy may possibly be more

71 I will comfort you; and over Jerusalem you will be comforted.
representative of first-century Hebrew phrasing since the Isaiah Scroll (presumably reflecting contemporary style) has the *Hithpa‘el* form instead of the *Pu‘al* form in Isaiah 66.13. It is also logical that if the original beatitude was formed in Aramaic, using *!Wmxjn:t.yl*, it would be natural to render it in Hebrew with *Wmx’n<t.yl*.

### II.4.1.3 Aramaic and Hebrew Reconstructions

**Aramaic**

*!Wmxjn:t.yl !Wnhd. aY”l;bea] !AhyybeWj*

**Hebrew**

*Wmx’n<t.yl ~h,v. ~ylibea]h; yrev.a;*

### II.4.2 What This Beatitude Means

The word πενθοῦντες can obviously mean those who mourn from grief over a loved one. Such an understanding of *mourning* is found in the New Testament. In Revelation 21.4 the coming of the New Jerusalem signals that there will be no more death or mourning (cf, 7.17). Mourning went beyond the confines of grief over death and was also viewed as a response to poverty, conditions in Israel, and even the world in general (Betz 1995:120). Combining the themes of *the poor* and *mourning* was not unusual even in the Old Testament (Isaiah 61.1-2 being a case in point). The religious literature of the Second Temple period continued to do this. Two examples from the Dead Sea Scrolls adequately illustrate how effortlessly these themes could be combined in contexts which may or may not recall to mind Isaiah 61.1-3.

4Q434 Frag. 1 Col. 1 line 1: *to be comforted over her mourning; her poverty.*

4Q417 fragment 1 column 1 line 10: *Do not say.] “For what is more lowly than a

---

72 *He will comfort them over Jerusalem.*

73 *hwn[ hlba l[ ~xnhl.* The translation follows Wise who preferred to translate *hwn[ as wn[ + 3f pronominal suffix set in apposition to hlba: to be comforted over her mourning; her affliction* (Eisenman & Wise 1992:241). Later, in a book of which Wise is a co-author, Cook’s translation is given: *that the poor woman might be comforted in her mourning* (Wise et al 1996: 394).
poor man?” So do not rejoice when you should mourn, lest you toil pointlessly in your life.

The first example has already been encountered and its possible connection with Isaiah 61.1-2 mentioned. The second seems not to make any allusion to Isaiah.

The link between the poor and divine comfort can also be illustrated from Jesus’ parable of Lazarus and the rich man (Lu 16.19-31). Lazarus is described as πτωχός (vs 20) and the only reason given for his being taken to Abraham’s bosom is the fact that in his lifetime bad things happened to him (vs 25). It is therefore interesting to note that in contrast to his suffering on earth he is now παρακαλείται.

II.4.2.1 Mourning Over Sin

Mourning is also used in the second beatitude to refer to those who mourn over sin. This interpretation goes back to ancient times. Saint Ephrem, for instance, sums it up nicely in his comments on this beatitude, saying:

74 Blessed are those who mourn: those lamenting on account of their sins.

The word oYXNttMd oYLB)l nwhYBw+ is the masculine, plural participle of xN) oYXYNttM, which means to groan or lament, and should not be confused with the verb xwN (meaning: to rest) which would have the form: oYXNttM (McCarthy 1993:108).
Sirach 48.24, in speaking of Isaiah, makes reference to an eschatological understanding of Isaiah 61.1-3:

_In the power of the spirit he saw the last things, he comforted the mourners of Zion he revealed the future to the end of time, and hidden things long before they happened._

The _mourners of Zion_ are identified with the righteous in an apocryphal Psalm discovered in Qumran devoted to Zion (11Q5 22.8) when it says: _How your blameless have mourned you_ (Wise et al 1996:451).

**II.4.2.2 Isaiah 61 as a Prophecy Concerning the Day of Salvation**

This beatitude is predicated on an eschatological understanding of Isaiah 61 in which the preaching of good news and the comforting of mourners are equated with a coming salvation. This interpretation of divine comfort is not unique to Jesus, but was normative amongst Jews of that time. This is reflected in a prayer for consolation which was inserted (according to _Keth_ 8b) into the Jewish blessing of Grace after Meals (Jastrow [1903] 1992:195). It calls on God to send Elijah and says concerning him: Wnl'-rF,b;ywl tAmx'n<w> tA[Wvy> tAbAj tArAfB.76 (Singer 1962:382).

The proclamation of the year of the Lord’s favour in Isaiah 61.2 is not separate from the reversal of fortunes for the poor, mourners, broken-hearted, etc. A direct correlation between them is doubtless what Isaiah intended. The commentaries of Rashi and Kimchi on Isaiah 61.2 probably reflect a popular, Jewish understanding of this verse which pre-dates the time of Christ. Rashi says that the year of the Lord’s favour is a _year of comfort and winning favour_.77 Similarly, Kimchi also connects the year of favour with God comforting his people, adding: _as it is written, “In my favour I will comfort you”._78

76 _And he will proclaim to us the good news, salvation and comfort._

77 JFWYF RFJU ŠQZ

78 KJŠOHQ JQFWYBF BFŠLZ
Such an interpretation is also reflected in the Peshitta version of Isaiah 61.2. The Hebrew text follows *the year of the LORD’s favour* with ḫaymeleq ʼnay ʼay. Targum Jonathan renders this as an"h'la/ ʼa/ ḫq [̂] rWP ʼay. The Peshitta has ḫl̄ NQrwP Mwy. The Hebrew idiom ʼnay means *day of vengeance* (Brown et al [1906] 1999:668). The wording of the targum, at'Wn[]rWP ʼay, means *day of retribution* (Jastrow [1903] 1992:1148). The difference in meaning between *vengeance* and *retribution* is not great. The Peshitta, on the other hand, employs the Aramaic words an'q'r>WP. am'ay, which means *the day of redemption.*

Here, the Peshitta shows its dependence on a targumic tradition which stressed the positive promises of Isaiah 61.1-2 and equated *the year of the LORD’s favour with the day of redemption.* To achieve this it appears as if ancient rabbis took advantage of the fluid state of Aramaic pronunciation during the Imperial period in which the phoneme q became interchangeable with [̂]. Perhaps the Hebrew word ʼn"q' was originally given the oral translation an'[̂]r>WP [payment]. This could then have evolved into both the at'Wn[]rWP of Targum Jonathan and the an'q'r>WP (NQrwP) of the Peshitta.

### II.4.2.3 Comfort and the Day of Salvation Influenced by Isaiah 52

Evidence for equating the comfort of *those who mourn* with *salvation* can also be found in the New Testament. For instance, Simeon, in Luke 2.25, is honoured as one who was waiting for the *paraklēsin tou/ ʼIsrah{l} [consolation of Israel].* In Luke 2.38, similarly righteous individuals are spoken of as waiting for the *lútrōsin ʼIrousalhm [redemption of Jerusalem].*

Luke uses these terms synonymously, and this is no coincidence. They are paired together in Isaiah 52.9, which says:

---

79 ¼hlal anqrwpd amwyd
80 Jeremiah 10.11 is in Aramaic and, oddly, employs two spellings of the word land: qra and [ra [= Heb
~ll'v'Wry> la;G" AM[; hwhy ~x;nl-yKi

For the LORD has comforted his people; he has redeemed Jerusalem.

In turn, these parallel promises are identified with salvation in 52.10: The LORD will lay bare his holy arm in the sight of all the nations, and all the ends of the earth will see the salvation of our God.

Isaiah 52 plays an important role in understanding the theological background of the Beatitudes. Even as Isaiah 61.1-3 provides the link between the poor of the first beatitude and those who mourn in the second, so Isaiah 52 provides the link between the kingdom and comfort.

This will, incidentally, give additional confirmation that the Beatitudes were originally given in Aramaic because the association of kingdom with salvation comes from the Targum to Isaiah 52.7.

Isaiah 52.7 reads: How beautiful on the mountains are the feet of those who bring good news, who proclaim peace, who bring good tidings, who proclaim salvation, who say to Zion, “Your God reigns!” (NIV). In Hebrew, the last clause is: %yhl'Ola/ %l;m'. This is rendered in Targum Jonathan by: %yhil'a/D, at'Wkl.m; ta;ylig>t.yai.81 Thus, the mention in Matthew 4.23 that Jesus was κηρύσσων τὸ εὐαγγέλιον τῆς βασιλείας should be understood as an allusion to Isaiah 52.7. As should be clear by now, the allusion of the kingdom of heaven comes from Daniel 782. The reading of Isaiah 52.7 in the Targum allows this metaphor of the kingdom to become the good news. As this verse extols even the feet of the messenger on the mountains, perhaps this is yet another reason that Jesus is pictured delivering this good news of the kingdom on a mountain (Mt 5.1).

#ra].

81 The kingdom of your God is revealed

82 The terms kingdom of God and kingdom of heaven both have the same meaning, as heaven in this case is a paraphrasis for God (Jeremias 1971:97).
Isaiah 52 ends with a section (52.13-15) on the servant of the LORD. It is worth noting that where verse 13 says מַעֲלֶה יִשְׂרָאֵל [my servant] the Targum says, ClientRect מַעֲלֶה יִשְׂרָאֵל. This then leads into Isaiah 53, well known for its application to Jesus (even by Christ himself; e.g., verse 12 in Lk 22.37).

The Melchizedek Scroll (11Q13) equates the coming of Melchizedek in an eschatological year of Jubilee with the day of salvation. In column two, lines 17 through 20 the prophecy of Isaiah 52.7 is interpreted according to 61.1-2 and Daniel 9.26:

This scripture’s interpretation: “the mountains” are the prophet[s], they who were sent to proclaim God’s truth and to prophesy to all Israel. “The messenger” is the Anointed of the Spirit, of whom Daniel spoke, “[“After the sixty-two weeks, an Anointed one shall be cut off” (Dan. 9.26). The “messenger who brings] good news, who announces salvation” is the one of whom it is written, “[“to proclaim the year of the Lord’s favor, the day of vengeance of our God;] to comfort all who mourn” (Isa. 61:2). . .] (Wise et al 1996:457)

This passage gives a valuable look at the way apocalyptic circles combined and conflated texts. As here, so with the Beatitudes, the messianic prophecies of Isaiah 52 are used to interpret Isaiah 61. To paraphrase: the one who announces the good news of the kingdom of heaven to the poor is also the one who proclaims comfort for all who mourn. This messenger is the Messiah. This has a great bearing on the meaning of the second beatitude. In the same way that the good news for the poor is that the kingdom of heaven is delivered to them, so the comfort for those who mourn is the announcement that the day of salvation has come.

In the Thanksgiving Scroll, column 27 (4Q427 fr 7, col 2), lines five and six is a reference to the coming time when:

mourn[ing] has ended] and grief flees. Peace is manifest, fear ceases, a fountain

83 Though 11Q13 is written in Hebrew there is evidence that it is a translation from an Aramaic document (e.g., in this section, the servant of Isaiah 52.13 is identified with the Messiah). At any rate, it reflects a targumic interpretation of Isaiah.
for [eternal] b[lessing] opens, and healing for all the eternal ages. Iniquity is ended, agony ceases as there is no sickne[ss] (Wise et al 1996:113).

II.4.2.4 Interpreting Comfort as Salvation elsewhere in Isaiah

Other verses in Isaiah which also speak of comfort were also fused into a general understanding of divine comfort which became identified with salvation. For instance, Isaiah 40.1-2 equates the comfort of God with the forgiveness of sins and peace:

   Comfort, comfort my people, says your God. Speak gently to Jerusalem and call to her that her warfare is fulfilled and her sin is forgiven; that she took from the hand of the LORD double for all her sins.

Among the Dead Sea Scrolls these verses were combined with numerous other quotations (e.g., Is 41.8-9; 49.7, 13-17; 43.1-6; 51.1-3, 22-2; 54.4-19; et al) in 4Q176 to foretell of a coming time of salvation (Wise et al 1996:232-233). In fact, this series of quotations is introduced with the words: And from the book of Isaiah, words of comfort: (Wise et al 1996:232).

II.4.2.5 Jesus and Fasting as a Sign of Mourning

Mourning, whether for personal or national sin, was also accompanied by fasting (cf, Ju 20.26, Jl 2.12, Ezr 10.1, 6, Es 4.3). The Sermon on the Mount presupposes that fasting was part of the lifestyle of believers and therefore includes instructions on how to fast (Mt 6.16-18). In contrast to this, fasting was not a part of the lifestyle of Jesus and his disciples during his earthly ministry. In Matthew 9.14-15, Jesus is asked why his disciples do not fast as do the disciples of John and the Pharisees. He answers by saying: How can the guests of the bridegroom mourn while he is still with them? The time will come when the bridegroom will be taken from them; then they will fast (NIV). Jesus’ emphasis on the arrival of the kingdom was demonstrated by a lack of fasting and in celebration dinners which were symbolic of the messianic banquet to come (Jeremias 1971:116). That this went against religious sensibilities of the time is illustrated by the accusation against Jesus for his eating and drinking (Mt 11.19): behold a glutton and a drunkard; a friend of tax collectors and sinners (NIV).
The accusation against Jesus as a glutton and a drunkard is contrasted in Matthew 11.18 to the fasting of John the Baptist. John’s characteristic emphasis on fasting led to the accusation that he had a demon. This may be a clue to understanding the earlier comment of Jesus to the people concerning John (Mt 11.7b): *What did you go out into the desert to see? A reed shaken by the wind?* (NIV). This is likely a reference to sayings of ridicule which were actually leveled at John by his enemies. Ephrem, in his commentary on the Diatessaron, indicates that *reed* in this passage is used as a metaphor because it is hollow, saying:  

> (NIV)  

John’s ascetic lifestyle of self-deprivation and fasting probably made it easy to caricature him as a kind of hollow reed. Reeds grow beside rivers. John’s preaching out by the river Jordan may have been parodied as the sound made by hollow reeds by the side of a river when the wind blows on them. The Hebrew word for *wind*, *x:Wt*, can also mean *spirit* as well as *demon*. This same is true of Aramaic *ax'Wt*. The later comment by Jesus, that there were those who said that John had a demon, may be a play on the word *x:Wt/ax'Wt*. The Diatessaron’s rendering (as quoted by Ephrem in his commentary) of κάλαμον ὑπὸ ἄνεμου σαλαζεύομενον is *Oyztm*  

> (Leloir 1990:130).  

The use of *Oyztm* (from the verb *Owz*) gives another clue that the reference to *a reed shaken by the wind* may be a pun related to the accusation that John was demon possessed. The verb *Owz* corresponds to the Jewish Aramaic [:Wz which means not only *shake* but *be frightened* as well. The word *y[eyY>z:m*. (*Pa'el* participle), meaning *frightening demons*, is used in Targum Yerushalmi at Numbers 6.24 (Jastrow [1903] 1992:388). Thus, the fact that this verb is routinely used to describe the behaviour of demons may suggest that the depiction of John as a *reed shaken by the wind* is a reference to the way that John’s detractors would mock him as some sort of demon possessed ascetic.

**II.4.2.6 OMatthew’s Understanding of This Beatitude**
In the Hebrew reconstruction the vocabulary seems tailored to produce an allusion not only to Isaiah 61.2 but to Isaiah 66 as well. It appears that the original sermon of Jesus which used Isaiah 61.1-3 as a springboard (cf, Lu 4.18-27) was deliberately amended to promote other allusions, even at the expense of the former (as in the first beatitude). The question was asked at the end of the previous chapter, why, if there was already a Hebrew beatitude for the poor of the earth (an allusion to Is 11.4) would OMatthew change this to the poor in spirit (an allusion to Is 66.2)? By the same token, why has OMatthew also framed the second beatitude as an allusion to Isaiah 66? The answer that makes the most sense is this: Jerusalem has been destroyed.

The reason why allusions to promises that God dwells with the humble and contrite in spirit (Is 66.2) and that those who mourn over Jerusalem (Is 66.10) will be comforted (Is 66.13) is because the Temple and the Holy City lie in ruins. Part of the purpose of the Gospel of Matthew is to evangelize Jews. OMatthew has reframed the first and second beatitudes after Isaiah 66 to allow the gospel of the kingdom to be relevant to the new circumstances. The idea that Jesus opened a new dispensation which eliminated the need for Temple sacrifice had been around since the time of Stephen (Acts 6.14, 7.48-50). OMatthew has used the allusion Stephen gives (Is 66.1-2), to proclaim that the bad news is in fact good news. God does not need a temple to dwell with men. With the destruction of Jerusalem the understanding of Isaiah’s !AYci ylebea] took on an even greater significance (Strack & Billerbeck 1926:195). To this day the ninth of Ab (the date of the destruction of the Temple) is a day of mourning. No longer did this term signify those who mourned over sin, awaiting the day of salvation. It now became a term designating those who mourned Israel’s fate; grieving over the inability to offer sacrifices and anticipating the day that the Temple would be rebuilt (Strack & Billerbeck 1926:195).

The Hebrew version of the Beatitudes OMatthew presents is the one used by the Jewish-Christian community post 70 AD and was part of their witness to their brethren. If OMatthew changed those addressed from ~ylibea]h' to ~yliB.a;\t.Mih; as

86 Having said that, scholars involved with Q research affirm the centrality which Isaiah 61.1-2 plays as a
mentioned earlier, the allusion to Isaiah 61.2 would be hurt at the expense of an allusion to Isaiah 66.10. Yet, after 70 AD Isaiah 66.10 became a very important verse in rabbinical teaching (e.g., *tSota* 15.11, *B Bath* 60b, *Gitt* 57a, *Pesq Rab* 34; see Strack & Billerbeck 1926: 196-197). The reason for the command to *rejoice with Jerusalem and be glad for her all who love her* (NIV) in Isaiah 66.10 is because of the eschatological promise of *comfort* in 66.13. Strack and Billerbeck (1926:195) point out that one of the names for the Messiah is *~xen:m*. [comforter] (*San* 98b; *yBer* 3.5a). That *OMatthew* is pointing to Jesus as the one who brings comfort to *those who mourn* can be seen in such passages as Matthew 11.28-30 and 23.37-39 (cf, 24.31).

### II.4.3 How Should We Understand this Beatitude?

#### II.4.3.1 Mourning Relates to Any Personal Tragedy

The second beatitude is often used as a text at funerals and is popularly understood as a promise to those who are experiencing personal crisis. As with the first beatitude this one has a very direct dependence on an allusion to Isaiah 61.1-3. In Isaiah *those who mourn* are synonymous with the *poor*. The passage is focused on all who are in misery. Therefore it is possible to take the words in their literal sense. The fact that *OMatthew* has lent this beatitude to apply it towards those who have experienced national misery and mourning may mean that, providentially, those who apply this beatitude to personal tragedy are not really in error.

#### II.4.3.2 Mourning Relates to Repentance of Sin

From an ancient Jewish eschatological perspective, the term *AYci ylebea* (from Is 61.3) seems to have been a technical term before 70 AD (Sir 48.24), probably associated with those *mourning the sins of Israel* waiting for the *comfort of Israel* (Lk 2.25). *Mourning* as relating to Isaiah 61.2-3 was then understood as *mourning over sin*, whether personal sin or national sin (cf, 1QH 18.15). Thus, Strack and Billerbeck (1926:195) state that those who understood both, their unworthiness before God and the nearness of the *kingdom of heaven* were perceived to be *those who mourn* [Bußtrauer].
The concept that this beatitude is addressed to those who recognize their need for repentance is not a new one. This was how the Church Fathers understood it (Dupont 1973:548). For example, Clement of Alexandria, in referring to this beatitude, substitutes the word πενθοῦντες with the word μετανοοῦντες [those who repent] (Strom 4.6.36). In fact, until the twentieth century this was the primary view (Dupont 1973:548).

II.4.3.3 Mourning Relates to Sorrow for this World

One of the things about this beatitude which has bothered some is that it calls those who mourn: Blessed. Thus, a growing number of exegetes\(^\text{87}\) came to the conclusion that the interpretation which makes the most sense is that those who mourn do so because they have made a break with this world and long for the kingdom of heaven to replace the kingdom of this world (Rv 12.10). It must be admitted that this certainly fits well with the greater Christian message of citizenship in a heavenly kingdom. However, it does less than justice to the concept of mourning in its Jewish sense.

II.4.3.4 Mourning Relates to All Three Interpretations

All these competing interpretations can engender too much caution. Newman and Stine (1988:113), for instance, acknowledge that this beatitude is based on an allusion to Isaiah 61.2 and mention that the Septuagint uses the verb πενθέω for mourning for the dead as well as for sin. Yet, they state, “no reason for mourning is given, nor should it be in the translation” (Newman & Stine 1988:113). Though such ambivalence in translation may be justified, it does not mean that Jesus had no particular view in mind.

For Jesus, putting the proclamation of the kingdom of heaven into language alluding to Isaiah 61.1-3 was purposeful on two levels. Jesus certainly wanted those who were poor, dispossessed, in misery and mourning to know that God was involving himself in their plight. This is one reason why Jesus raises the dead. He is meeting the need of those who mourn. Yet, Jesus also uses the term those who mourn as a metaphor for repentance in a way not dissimilar to that of contemporary Jewish teachers.

\(^{87}\) Dupont (1973:550-551) lists: Zahn, Klostermann, Keulers, Soiron, Schneider, Strecker, Hoffmann, Bultmann, Brouwer, Schniewind, Michaelis, Lohmeyer, Trilling et al.
The lack of dichotomy, for Jesus, between spiritual usage of terms like *poor* and *those who mourn* and as terms for those experiencing real physical problems can best be illustrated by the story of Lazarus and the Rich Man (Lk 16.19-31). Lazarus is described as the poorest of the poor (16.20-21). As mentioned earlier, nothing is said about any deed of righteousness done by him. Yet, when he dies he goes to Abraham’s bosom (16.22). In fact, his *comfort* is said to be in response to the evil he experienced on earth (16.25). This last point also gives strength to an interpretation of this beatitude which suggests that *mourning* over personal misery is rewarded with *comfort*.

Thus, in asking what does this beatitude mean when it uses the term *those who mourn*, three answers must be given at the same time. Jesus is ostensibly addressing those who are physically and socially in misery. He is also calling people to mourn over the sin in their lives and in the world around them. By having both an ‘open’ and a ‘hidden’ meaning for this beatitude Jesus is calling his disciples to a life which rejects the values of this world. He does this by calling blessed those who would otherwise be despised (or at least, in this case, unenvied).
Chapter Five

Blessed are the meek for they will inherit the earth

Matthew 5.5: μακάριοι οί πραείς ὅτι αὐτοὶ κληρονομήσουσιν τὴν γῆν

II.5.1 Aramaic and Hebrew Reconstructions

II.5.1.1 The Hebrew Reconstruction

It has already been shown that the addition of this beatitude to the present corpus happened long after the Beatitudes were translated into Greek. This brings up the question of why it would be necessary to reconstruct this beatitude into Hebrew and Aramaic at all. The logic stems from the fact that it was only added later does not mean that it did not exist in either a Hebrew or an Aramaic form and that the Greek text which came afterwards is based on that.

Reconstructing the words of this beatitude is especially easy since it is a virtual quotation from the Septuagint translation of Psalm 37.11a:

Psalm 37.11a: οι δὲ πραεῖς κληρονομήσουσιν γῆν
Matthew 5.5: μακάριοι οί πραείς ὅτι αὐτοὶ κληρονομήσουσιν τὴν γῆν

It is therefore natural to suggest that the Hebrew reconstruction should mostly follow the Masoretic Text of Psalm 37.11a: #r<a'-Wvr>yyl ~ywln"[]w:. Others before have arrived at the same conclusion. Therefore, though it is unintentional, it comes as no surprise that the wording of the Hebrew reconstruction is exactly the same as that found in the ancient Shem Tov Hebrew Matthew (though this version has no vowel points) found in the Even Bohan (Howard 1995:16): #r<a' Wvr>yyl ~hev, ~ywln"[]h' yrEv.a; Only slightly different is the reconstruction offered by Lindsey (1973:XXII) matched by the translation of Delitzsch: #r<a' Wvr>yyl hM'he yKi ~ywln"[]h' yrEv.a;. Similarly, the Salkinson/Ginsburg Hebrew
New Testament has: \#r<a'-Wvr>yyI ~he-yKi ~ywIn"[h' yrEv.a;

The poetic rhythm of each reconstruction holds to the three-beat pattern Burney suggests.

II.5.1.2 The Aramaic Reconstruction

Burney’s reconstruction of this beatitude was: tiubehón īnwánayyá dehinnún yeretún lē'ar’a\(^{88}\) (Burney 1925:166). This is more or less in agreement with (and probably influenced by) the Christian Palestinian version which reads: nw Nh )YNwN ( nwhYgw+i (r) L hty nwtrY.\(^{89}\) The use of the word aY"n:w"n>[i in the Aramaic reconstruction of this beatitude is not automatic. Another option is available. Instead of aY"n:w"n>[i

Targum Jonathan to Psalm 37.11a uses !ynlt'w>n>[i.

It is actually unclear as to whether or not aY"n:w"n>[i can be considered a more Palestinian form than aY"n:t'w>n>[i. The Christian Palestinian version which employs )YNwN ( (as opposed to the Old Syriac, Peshitta and Harclean versions, which all use )KYKM) is, however, a primary source for our knowledge of Palestinian Aramaic (Black 1967:18).

What is the evidence from the Targums? It would be difficult to say precisely. For instance, in Psalms 37.11 Targum Jonathan uses !ynlt'w>n>[i; and in Isaiah 61.1: aY"n:t'w>n>[i; but in Proverbs 3.34: !w"n>[i. Consider the treatment of the word wn"[ in Numbers 12.3:

\begin{align*}
\text{Targum Onkelos:} & \quad !t'w>n>[i \\
\text{Targum Neofiti:} & \quad !w\text{wn}[^{90}\text{ (Diez Macho 1974 4:113)} \\
\text{Targum Pseudo-Jonathan:} & \quad !t\text{wn}[^{90}\text{ (Ginsburger 1903:248)}
\end{align*}

\(^{88}\) a[r>a'l. !Wtr>yI !Wnhid. aY"n:w"n>[i AhybeWj

\(^{89}\) a[ral hty !wtrY !wnhd aynwn[ !whybwj

\(^{90}\) This may be regarded as another spelling for !w"n>[i, (Jastrow [1903] 1992:1092).
Targum Onkelos is by all accounts much more influenced by Babylonian Aramaic than the other targumim. On the other hand, Targum Neofiti is considered by some to be the most representative of the Palestinian targum tradition (Black 1967:19). However, Targum Pseudo-Jonathan is also a Palestinian targum so the results must be declared inconclusive.

An appeal to the Aramaic of the Jerusalem Talmud is also unable to resolve the issue. For instance, when, in Kilayim 9.32b, Rabbi (Judah haNasi) is praised as being very meek, some manuscripts read: yGIs; !t'w>n>[i hw"h] yBir; while others have: !w"n>[, hw"h] yBir: !yGIs; (Dalman 1927:28).

Dalman (1927:64) understood these words to be practically interchangeable. Jastrow ([1903] 1992:1092) gives wyn"[ as an equivalent to both !w"n>[, and !t'w>n>[i. This doesn’t answer the question, but only relates to the fact that they may be translated the same. Beyer strictly delineates !w"n>[ as belonging to Galilean Aramaic and !t'w>n>[i as Babylonian Aramaic (1984:662). Although !t'w>n>[i also found its way into rabbinic Hebrew and is found in numerous talmudic passages (Jastrow [1903] 1992:1092) the scale is tipped just enough in favour of !w"n>[, to use it in the Aramaic reconstruction of this beatitude.

II.5.1.3 Aramaic and Hebrew Reconstructions

Aramaic

a[r>a; !Wtr>yl !WNhiD> aY"n:w"n>[, !AhybeWj

Hebrew

#r<a' Wvr>yyl ~h,v, ~ywln"[h' yrEv.a;;

The words in these reconstructions are almost all found in the Dead Sea Scrolls. The only exception is the Aramaic word !w"n>[. The question, however is not whether it
is part of ancient Jewish vocabulary in the first century, but, is it to be preferred to 
!t'w>n>[i. The evidence is not so strong that use of !t'w>n>[i must be ruled out. 
Thus, it must be conceded that an Aramaic reconstruction of this beatitude could be just 
as credible using aY"n:t'w>n>[i instead of aY"n:w"n>[. In either case, the 
meaning would be unaffected.

Since the reconstructions are patterned after the Hebrew and Aramaic versions of Psalm 
37.11a they are certainly idiomatic enough to serve as legitimate possibilities for an 
original Hebrew or Aramaic beatitude, if indeed, especially in this instance, there ever 
was one.

Because the wording of this beatitude is so close to the Septuagint version of Psalm 
37.11a it would be difficult to suggest that there is a Hebrew or Aramaic original behind 
it were it not for a couple of important facts. Firstly, the original position of this 
beatitude in Greek was immediately following the first and together the two are a good 
example of poetic parallelism. Secondly, though the first beatitude is addressed to oï 
πιωκοί, and this one to oï πραείζε, they each allude to verses which, in Hebrew used 
wn"[ (specifically: Is 61.1 and Ps 37.11). The natural association of the poor in the 
first beatitude with the meek in Psalm 37.11 would only happen with those who were 
familiar with the Hebrew bible and a Hebrew (or possibly Aramaic) version of the 
Beatitudes.

The evidence, which suggests that this beatitude was an addition to the group of Greek 
beatitudes incorporated into Matthew, is too strong to allow that it was a part of the 
original beatitudes of Jesus. Yet, the ease with which it can be reconstructed into 
Aramaic and Hebrew, keeping to the three-beat rhythm noted by Burney gives pause. 
Perhaps the reason the first beatitude has been changed from poor to poor in spirit was to 
accommodate a Hebrew version which balked at having two beatitudes addressed to 
~ywln"[]h'. It is then possible that when this version was translated into Greek the 
third beatitude was dropped but RMatthew who reincorporated it knew the tradition. An 
interesting side note to this theory is that this suggests, once more, that the Hebrew
reconstruction is secondary, but at the same time the basis for the Greek text as we know it.

II.5.2 The Purpose of a Beatitude Alluding to Psalm 37.11

If this beatitude had been in the pre-synoptic corpus of beatitudes it would have occasioned, as Dupont suggests, a sort of doublet (1958:252). But, it is not likely that Jesus would have said ~ywLn[i]h' yrEv.a;; (or aY"n:w"n>[, !AhybeWj) twice. What is more probable is that the word wn"[ in the first beatitude, which was an allusion to Isaiah 61.1, brought to mind another scripture, Psalm 37.11, which was easily applied to the kingdom of heaven being given to the saints. Thus, in oral tradition, Psalm 37.11 was linked to the first beatitude to give greater explanation to it; in effect saying: 

_Blessed are the poor for theirs is the kingdom of heaven; as it is written: The poor shall inherit the earth._

Such a preaching tradition may be the inspiration behind Didache 3.7, which has wording similar to but different enough from this beatitude to suggest that it is not a direct quotation (Betz 1995:126): ἵσθι δὲ πραῦς ἐπεὶ πραεῖς κληρονομήσουσι τὴν γῆν.

At any rate, it appears that Psalm 37.11 was used to interpret the first beatitude before it was translated into Greek. This tradition continued in the Greek speaking church. It was convenient for the purpose of the editor who later inserted it that the Septuagint used another word in Psalm 37.11 for wn"[, namely, πραῦς. This allowed him to add a beatitude with the right amount of words and continue his poetic motif concentrating on words beginning with the letter π.

It must have been felt that the implication of the kingdom of heaven as an inheritance in the first beatitude was not explicit enough. Therefore it was deemed necessary to link it with scriptures which spoke of inheritance. Thus, segments of the early Jewish-Christian church handed the first beatitude on with a tradition interpreting it by way of Psalm 37.11. Similarly, as noted earlier, James combines a reference to the first beatitude with an allusion to Proverbs 8.21, in order to make plain that the kingdom is inherited.
The idea that this beatitude exists to help explain the first beatitude is at least as old as Ephrem who in commenting on the first beatitude says:  

\[ \text{nwhNYBcB wQrts)d } \text{NKsM } \text{KYKML} \text{nwhYBw+d rM} \text{ nwMYrttN } \text{twNKsMB hB } \text{Ldw}^{92} \text{(Leloir 1990:56).} \]

It is also possible that the flexibility of the word \( \text{wn"[t]"} \) to mean *poor* as well as *humble* needed a certain amount of comment in order not to be misunderstood. Betz, who accepts that this beatitude is a commentary on the first (1995:126), yet states that “it would be a mistaken conclusion to take the MT of Psalm 37.11 using the term \( \text{~ywn[} \) and interpret the Greek equivalent on the basis of the Hebrew instead of the Greek” (1995:125). He further cautions against supposing that rabbinic theology can be read into the Sermon on the Mount (Betz 1995:125). That notwithstanding, he lists literary parallels from the Apocrypha, Dead Sea Scrolls, apocalyptic and also rabbinic literature (Betz 1995:126). It should have seemed self-evident that the use of \( \text{wn"[t]"} \) (or an Aramaic equivalent) in these sources would have more value for understanding this beatitude than an examination (which he gives) of the usages of \( \pi\rho\alpha\delta\tau\eta\zeta \) in pagan Greek literature (Betz 1995:126).

91 *But be thou meek, for “the meek shall inherit the earth.”*

92 *The poor are those who have divested themselves voluntarily. And, that they not become proud in this poverty, he said: “blessed are the meek.”*

93 *mildness, gentleness, or meekness*
Jesus refers to himself as πραυς and ταπεινός τῇ καρδίᾳ in Matthew 11.29. If Jesus is making an allusion here it must be to Isaiah 66.2. It appears to be a free translation of xWr-hken>W ynl[. The Septuagint translates these words as τὸν ταπεινὸν καὶ ἡσύχιον. As noted in chapter three, in manuscripts S and Q of the Septuagint the word ~ynln” in Isaiah 61.1 is also translated as ταπεινός. The Peshitta uses the word $ykm to translate both ταπεινός in Matthew 11.29 and πραυς in Matthew 5.5. Ephrem also employs Isaiah 66.2 in his discussion of the first beatitude in his commentary on the Diatessaron, saying: (Leloir 1990:56).

The words πραυς and ταπεινός are linked together elsewhere. For instance, they occur in the Septuagint version of Isaiah 26.6 as translations of ynl[ and ID:, respectively. Πραυς and ταπεινός are found together several times in First Clement. For example, Clement states that επιείκεια καὶ ταπεινοφροσύνη καὶ πραύτης παρὰ τοῖς ηὐλογημένοις ὑπὸ τοῦ θεοῦ (1Cl 30.8).

Though he uses the participle εὐλογημένος rather than μακάριος, one wonders whether it is possible that Clement had the Beatitudes in mind. It would, however, be too presumptuous to assume so. He admonishes believers to be ταπεινοφρονοῦντες [humble minded] because Isaiah 66.2 says: ἐπὶ τίνα ἐπιβλέψω, ἄλλη ἡ ἐπὶ τὸν πραύν καὶ ἡσύχιον καὶ τρέμουντά μου τὰ λόγια (1Cl 13.4).

The explanation of the word poor by Ephrem, mentioned above, as those who have

---

94 poor and crushed in spirit
95 the humble and peaceable
96 $ykm
97 And with whom will I tarry and dwell but among the humble of spirit.
98 Those who are mild and humble-minded and meek are those who are blessed by God.
99 On whom shall I look but on the meek and gentle and him who trembles at my words.
100 It is significant that the quotation from Isaiah 66.2 differs with one word. Where First Clement has πραυς, the Septuagint reads ταπεινός. Clement’s point would have been better made with a quotation containing the standard Septuagint reading. Perhaps this reflects a corruption in the text of First Clement in which the original which did agree with the Septuagint’s reading was changed to agree with another reading then current in the church.
divested themselves voluntarily, deserves additional comment. For in a similar way, the Shepherd of Hermas combines not only πραΰς and ταπεινός, but πτωχός as well, suggesting that if the Spirit is truly on a man he will make himself meek, humble and poor:

πρώτον μὲν ο ἐξὼν τὸ πνεῦμα τὸ ἀνωθεν πραΰς ἐστί καὶ ἡσυχίας καὶ ταπεινόφρων καὶ ἀπεχόμενος ἀπὸ πάσης ποιησάς καὶ ἐπιθυμίας ματαίας τοῦ αἰώνος τοῦτο καὶ ἑαυτὸν ἐνδεέστερον ποιεῖ πάντων τῶν ἀνθρώπων. (Hm 11.8a)

But first of all, the one who has the spirit from above is meek and peaceable and humble and keeps himself from all evil and wicked desires of this age and makes himself poorer than all men.

II.5.3 The Use of ὧν”[ʼ as an Allusion to Numbers 12.3

The best biblical example of the meekness implied in the third beatitude would have to be Moses. Numbers 12.3 says: hm'd''a]h' ynEP.-l[: rv,a] ~d''a;h' lKomi daom. ὧν”[ʼ hv,mo vyaih''w>.101 It is translated into the Septuagint thus: καὶ ἀνθρωπὸς μωϋσῆς πραΰς φόδρα παρὰ πάντας τοὺς ὄντας ἐπὶ τῆς γῆς.

The use of Moses to illustrate this beatitude has been suggested often enough by modern commentators [e.g, Strack & Billerbeck (1926:197), Allison (1993:180), Trites (1992:186)]. In this, modern interpreters are joined by ancient ones such as Origen (Exod hom 11.6), Eusebius (Dem ev 3.2), Jerome (Ep 82.3), and Theodoet of Cyrrhus (Rel hist 11.2), as well as others (Allison 1993:181).102 Ephrem also gives an allusion to Numbers 12.3103 when he uses Moses as an example of the meekness intended here, noting: κυκμ hrd yNB oM _PF zYK _wh 104 (Leloir 1990:56).

101 And the man Moses was very humble, more than all men on the face of the earth.

102 Allison also adds references to Apophthegmata Patrum, PG 65; Synecletica 11; John the Persian 4; and Antiochus Monachus (Hom 115).

103 The Peshitta version of Numbers 12.3 reads: ) (d _d ]_ynb nwHlk oM b+ _wh κυκμ ) _swm ]_bd [arbgw a[ra l[d avnynb _whlk !m bj awh $ykm avwm].

104 For Moses was more humble than the sons of his generation [hrd ynb !m avwm ryg awh $yk].
The comment that Moses was the meekest man on earth in Numbers 12.3 became the basis for characterizations of Moses emphasizing his meekness – to the point that it became proverbial (Allison 1993:72). In fact, the terms \( \text{\textit{wn}}\) and \( \text{\textit{prawj}} \) are so associated with Moses in ancient Jewish literature that use of them in connection with other individuals is often a sign that such individuals are being cast according to a mold of which Moses is the principle type (Allison 1993:72). Aside from the fact that \textit{OMatthew} has coloured the setting of the Sermon on the Mount in such a way as to blatantly proclaim Jesus to be the new Moses, Allison suggests that the inclusion of a beatitude using the word \( \text{\textit{prawj}} \) is an allusion to Moses because the only other times \textit{OMatthew} includes this word (i.e., Mt 11.29 and 21.5\textsuperscript{105}) he is hinting at Moses (Allison 1993:182, 218-33, 248-53). Biblical personalities such as Joshua, Gideon, Samuel, David, Elijah, Josiah, Ezekiel, Jeremiah, Ezra, and Baruch all had their lives reinterpreted utilizing vocabulary designed to suggest that they followed a tradition of Mosaic character traits (Allison 1993:11-73). Thus, \( \text{\textit{wn}}\) is associated also with Gideon in the \textit{Liber Antiquitatum Biblicarum} (Allison 1993:30).

---

\textsuperscript{105} Allison suggests that the quotation of Zechariah 9.9 fits an understanding of Moses held by Jews in ancient times and gives examples of Moses depicted as riding on a donkey. That Zechariah uses the word \( \text{\textit{yn}}\) rather than \( \text{\textit{wyn}}\) makes little difference. Rabbi Resh Lakish is quoted in the \textit{Mtzudat Zion} commentary in the Rabbinic Bible saying that in this verse \( \text{\textit{yn}}\) should be understood as \( \text{\textit{wyn}}\). Rabbi David Kimchi says the same, drawing attention to the fact that the Targum translates \( \text{\textit{yn}}\) here as \( \text{\textit{twn}}\).
Similarly, \textit{wn}' is also connected to Abraham. Berachot \textit{6b} states that it will be said of those who designate a regular place of prayer (as Abraham did), when they die: \textit{wyn[ ya wnyba \~hrba lv wydymltm dysx ya}.\textsuperscript{106} Thus, those who emulate Abraham are termed \textit{wyn}'\textsuperscript{107}. Pirque Avoth (5.22) describes the disciples of Abraham as possessing three qualities: \textit{hl'p'v. vp,n< w> hk'Wmn> x:Wrw> hb'Aj !y}[,\textsuperscript{108} (Singer 1962:274). The last two are both terms synonymous with \textit{wn}'\textsuperscript{108}. In speaking of the various trials Abraham went through, Jubilees 17.17 states that \textit{in everything wherein he (God) had tried him, he was found faithful and his soul was not impatient} (Bowker 1969:229). Impatience is the opposite of \textit{wn}'\textsuperscript{109}. In the New Testament, the \textit{faithfulness} of Moses in Numbers 12.7 is alluded to in Hebrews 3.2 and 5. There, the \textit{pístis} of Moses is contrasted with the \textit{ēpistia} of the Israelites which caused them not to enter into God’s rest (He 3.19). In the context of Moses and the Israelites the \textit{rest} referred to is the \textit{Promised Land}. The writer of Hebrews reinterprets this as \textit{salvation}. In 4.1 he calls entering the rest of God a \textit{promise}. He leaves Moses as a subject but returns to him in 11.24-28.

\textsuperscript{106} \textit{Woe (for the death of) the humble one, woe for the pious one; one of the disciples of Abraham our father.}

\textsuperscript{107} \textit{wn}'\textsuperscript{107} is frequently found as the \textit{qere} for the \textit{kethib} \textit{wn}' (Davidson 1970:606).

\textsuperscript{108} \textit{a good eye (generosity), humble spirit and a lowly soul (humble minded)}

\textsuperscript{109} \textit{For his faithfulness and meekness he sanctified him, choosing him out of all flesh.}

\textsuperscript{110} \textit{aWh lm'a/n< ytiyBe-lk'B.}
Among the things mentioned of Moses (He 11.27b) is that he endured as seeing him who is unseen.\footnote{τὸν γὰρ ἄρατον ὡς ὄρῳν ἐκατέρθησον.} This is a return to the allusion to Moses in Numbers 12. The mention of seeing him who is unseen is a reference to Numbers 12.8: With him (Moses) I speak face to face, clearly and not in riddles; he sees the form of the LORD. . . (NIV). It seems likely that he endured alludes to 12.3 because of the fact that \textit{wn"[t]} can also mean patient or forbearing\footnote{Jastrow does not include the word \textit{forbearing} among his definitions of \textit{wn"[t]} but does so in defining the synonym, \textit{ltw>n>[i].}} (Jastrow [1903] 1992:1094).

The Aramaic equivalent of \textit{wn"[t]} is, as noted above, \textit{ltw>n>[i} (Allison 1993:72), yet it also found its way into the Hebrew vocabulary of Rabbinic literature. Allison (1993:71-72) quotes a story found in the Babylonian Talmud (Shabb 30b-31a), employing \textit{ltw>n>[i}, which he suggests emphasizes Hillel’s \textit{humility}. Yet, it is clear that it is Hillel’s \textit{patience} and \textit{forbearance} which the term intends to convey as it is expressly contrasted with the \textit{tWnD"p.q};\footnote{impatience} of Shammai.\footnote{It is interesting, with regard to Shammai being linked, almost proverbially with \textit{tWnD"p.q}; (cf, \textit{Avoth d’Rabbi Nathan} II, ch 29: \textit{yaM};\textit{v}; \textit{ltWnD"p.q;}) that Hillel is quoted in \textit{Pirqe Avoth} 2.6 as saying that an impatient man cannot teach \textit{[tlav hlwdg hlav ynb].} In the story, two men bet as to whether one of them can cause Hillel to get angry and attempts to do so by coming to him at inopportune times with silly questions. Hillel, of course, never does get angry and even congratulates the man each time on his good questions.\footnote{Each answer is prefaced by the statement \textit{my son you have asked a great question} \textit{[tlav hlwdg hlav ynb].}} Though a case can be made that Hillel’s \textit{gentleness} is being demonstrated by his soft answers it is more a case of his \textit{patience} being exhibited.

The concept of \textit{patience} and \textit{forbearance} attached to \textit{wn"[t]} and its synonyms may have a bearing on Hebrews 6.12, where Abraham, and those who would be like him, are said to \textit{inherit the promises} by means of \textit{πίστις} and \textit{μακροθυμία}. This would indicate that even here Numbers 12.3, 7 is in the back of the writer’s mind and that he was familiar
with the tradition of attributing the Mosaic character quality of \( \text{wn"['} \) to Abraham. Similarly, other instances of biblical heroes (such as the prophets and Job in James 5.10-11) being hailed for their \( \mu \kappa \rho \theta \gamma \mu \acute {i} \alpha \) could be based on a desire to promote the idea that the righteous shared in the \( \text{wn"['} \) not only of Moses, but of Jesus, the New Moses.

In rabbinic literature Hillel is cast as a figure who could be compared to Moses (Allison 1993:71). For instance, in Sanhedrin 11a it is clear to other rabbis present that Hillel is indicated when a voice from Heaven \([\text{lwq tb} \) announces that \text{there is one among you who is worthy that the Shekinah should rest on him as it did on Moses, but his generation did not merit it.} \) associated with Hillel was used to confirm his role as a Moses-type figure (Allison 1993:71). In fact, this quality engendered a beatitude-like blessing to be pronounced over him, which says: $\text{Xar l[ twkrb $l wwxny llh twwn}$. With \( \text{wn"['} \) being associated with Hillel, Moses and Abraham it may then come as no surprise that all three are used as positive examples, one right after the other, in the same chapter of Avot (5.20-22).

**II.5.4 Inheriting the Land**

The allusion to Psalm 37 should not be seen solely in terms of a reference to verse eleven. It is to the entirety of the Psalm that attention is being drawn. A quick reading of Psalm 37 shows that the promise of inheriting the land is not only to \text{the meek} (vs 11).

This is a recurring theme throughout the Psalm. Not only \text{the meek} are mentioned as heirs but also \text{those who hope in the LORD} (vs 9), \text{His blessed} (vs 22), and \text{the righteous} (vs 29). In each of these instances the same words (#r<a'-Wvr>yyI) are used as a formula. In addition, \text{the blameless} are told (vs 19) that their \text{inheritance will endure forever.}^{117}

---

^{116}\text{Patient Hillel, may blessings rest upon your head.}

^{117}\text{hy<.Ti ~l'Ax[ l. ~l'x}n:w>
Lastly, (vs 34) those who wait for the LORD and keep his way are told that God will exalt them to inherit the land.\textsuperscript{118} This is mentioned because of the fact that first-century discussion on this Psalm is at our disposal that suggests that at that time this Psalm was given an eschatological interpretation. Amongst the Dead Sea Scrolls is a running commentary on Psalm 37 entitled 4Qp Ps37 (also known as 4Q171). In this scroll the interpretation of those who will inherit the earth is, in each case, those of the Qumran community. Interestingly, the word \textit{meek} [\text{\textasciitilde}ywIn\text{\textasciitilde}] of verse eleven is interpreted by the word those in Qumran loved to use as a designation of their own community: \textit{the poor} [\text{\textasciitilde}ynwybah] (col 2, line 9).

\textbf{II.5.4.1 The Eschatological Understanding of Inheriting the Earth}

The word γῆ in the third beatitude represents the Hebrew word \#r<a,. It is γῆ which is most often used to translate \#r<a, in the Septuagint. However, \#r<a, can also be rendered in Greek by the word κόσμος. For instance, it has been suggested previously that in James 2.5 κόσμος is used to render \#r<a,. Κόσμος more exactly corresponds to the Hebrew word lbeTe rather than \#r<a, but, before the first century, lbeTe began to be used as a synonym for \#r<a,. The focal point for this seems to have been Rabbinic interpretation of Proverbs 8.26: lbeTe tWrp.; vaOrw> tAcWxw> \#r<a, hf[\text{\textasciitilde} aOl-d];.\textsuperscript{119}

\textsuperscript{118} \#r,a' tv,r,l'

\textsuperscript{119} \ldots before he made the earth or its fields or any of the dust of the world (NIV).
With reference to Proverbs 8.26, *Sifré* Deuteronomy 37 says that **lärxy #ra wsz lbt**\(^{120}\) (Jastrow [1903] 1992:1644). Similarly, *Yalkut* Proverbs 943 also refers to Proverbs 8.26 when it states that **wcra wsz lbt**\(^{121}\) (Jastrow [1903] 1992:1644). Though these citations come from literature compiled much later than the first century the correlation between the words **lbeTe** and **#r<a**, goes back, at least, to the time of the Dead Sea Scrolls. Consider the interpretation of Psalm 37.22 in 4Qp Ps37:

**Psalm 37.22**

WtrEK’yI wyl’L’qum.W #r<a' Wvr>yyl wyk’rbom. yKi

*Those the LORD blesses will inherit the land, but those he curses will be cut off.*

4Qp Ps37 3.10-11 (Lohse 1971:274)

[ ] ![image]

10. The interpretation is about the congregation of the poor which [ ] the inheritance of all the world.

11. They will inherit the exalted mountain of Israel and in his holy (place) they will enjoy themselves.

The sectarian writer interprets the words **#r<a' Wvr>yyl** by the parallel expressions: **l[beTe]h; lAk tl;x)n: **\(^{122}\) and **lae]r"f.yl ~Arm. rh; tae Wvr>yyl**\(^{123}\) This shows not only that *inheriting the land* was seen as *inheriting the world* but that *inheriting the land* was also interpreted as *inheriting a spiritual temple.*

---

120 *tebel* this is the land of Israel
121 *tebel* this is his land
122 *inheritance of all the world*
123 *They will inherit the exalted mountain of Israel.*
Paul shows that he is familiar with this correlation in Romans 4.13. He is discussing Genesis 15.7 in which the Lord promises to give Abraham the land of Canaan, but Paul reinterprets the verse to say that Abraham is promised the world [κόσμος] as an inheritance, which itself is spiritually interpreted to mean the benefits of salvation.

Strictly speaking, the promise was with regard to the land of Canaan, but Paul reinterprets the verse to say that Abraham is promised the world [κόσμος] as an inheritance, which itself is spiritually interpreted to mean the benefits of salvation.

It is remotely possible that Paul has the third beatitude in mind since in the middle of his allusion to Genesis 15.5-7 he speaks of salvation as a μακαρισμός and goes on to quote two beatitudes of David (Ro 4.6-8; referring to Ps 32.1-2). Mitigating against this is the fact that in this chapter he doesn’t mention the words πετώχος or πραΐς.

Associating salvation with the inheritance or possession of the world is carried into other early Christian literature. The Odes of Solomon are considered to be writings produced by the first-century Christian community (Platt 1927:120). In Ode 33.10 the redeemed are promised that they shall possess the new world that is incorrupt (Platt 1927:136). Similar terms are used in Ode 40.8, where God is praised for the fact that His inheritance is immortal life, and those who participate in it are incorrupt.

II.5.4.2 Connecting Psalm 37.11 to Isaiah 61

Since the focal point of the beatitudes is its allusion to Isaiah 61 the question must be asked: does an allusion to Psalm 37.11 have any bearing or connection with Isaiah 61? The answer is that this is certainly possible. Where the Septuagint version of Psalm 37.11 has κληρονομήσουσιν γῆν this beatitude has κληρονομήσουσιν τὴν γῆν. The addition of the almost superfluous word τὴν must not be glossed over for it may indicate that the allusion to Psalm 37.11 has been modified, not only to affect the word count, but to bring it into line with Isaiah 60.21 which has καὶ δι’ αἰώνας κληρονομήσουσιν τὴν γῆν, or Isaiah 61.7 which has οὗτως ἐκ δευτέρας κληρονομήσουσιν τὴν γῆν. The former may be preferable to the latter.125

---

124 This land to inherit
125 Though the idea that an allusion is being made to a verse in Isaiah 61 is attractive, it only works in
It is also important to notice that at Qumran the words \#r<a' Wvr>yyI of Psalm 37 also seem to be interpreted in the light of prophecies from the latter part of Isaiah. Seeing in the promise to inherit the land a reference to possessing the temple mount (4Qp Ps37 3.10) was likely inspired by such passages as these:

- Isaiah 57.13b: \( yvid.q' rh; vr:yylw > \#r<a,-lx;n>yI ybi \)
- Isaiah 63.18a: \( ^v,d.q'-~[; Wvr>y" r'[c.Mil; \)
- Isaiah 65.9b: \( hM'v'-WnK.v.yl yd:b'[w: yr:yxib. h'WvrEywl \)

Even in Isaiah 61.7, which equates inheriting the land with everlasting joy, the connection with the temple is close at hand for in the preceding verse the people of God will be called priests of the Lord. Thus, a beatitude containing a reference to inheriting the land is certainly compatible with a general allusion to the eschatological prophecy of Isaiah 61.

II.5.5 What is the Meaning of this Beatitude?

II.5.5.1 The Original Meaning

The understanding of this beatitude held by those who first heard it (had it been in Hebrew or Aramaic) would have been that it is those who are humble, meek and patient who are to receive the eschatological blessings of the Kingdom of God. The words inherit the earth, whether in reference to Psalm 37.11, Genesis 15.7 or Isaiah 60.21, would have received an interpretation dominated by the influence of Daniel 7.13-27. This Greek. In Hebrew, Isaiah 60.21, like Psalm 37.11 has \#r<a' Wvr>yyI, but Isaiah 61.7 has instead \( hn<v.mi ~c'r.a;B. Wvr"yyl \) [in their land they will inherit double]. Since the author of this beatitude certainly knew Hebrew it seems more likely that if an allusion to Isaiah is being made at all it is more probable that this is to Isaiah 60.21 (which in fairness is only one verse away from chapter 61).

126 But the man who makes me his refuge will inherit the land and possess my holy mountain.

127 For a little while your people possessed your holy place (NIV).

128 And, from Judah (I will bring forth) those who will possess my mountains; my chosen people will inherit them, and there will my servants live (NIV).
would have included an understanding of messianic promises for national Israel (cf, Ac 1.6). But as the early Church developed a spiritual inheritance theology apart from concepts associated with political liberation the focus became squarely on the benefits of salvation.

II.5.5.2 How is This Beatitude to be Understood?

Ironically, this beatitude is the easiest to understand, and at the same time the most misunderstood. The fact that originally those addressed were the poor is completely lost as it now stands. The word πραξίς seems solely to have been used as a positive character quality (Arndt & Gingrich 1957:705). It retains the positive way that ων’ and λτ’ were used (i.e., humility for Moses and patience for Hillel) but misses the way these words were used to describe those living in poverty (i.e., afflicted; Ps 9.13, 69.33).

It is only when οἱ πραξίς is translated into English that another issue comes up. Modern usage of the word meek as shy or timid has turned this wonderful character quality into something unattractive. Thus, Arndt and Gingrich (1957:705) translate πραξίς as meek then, as a disclaimer, say, in the older favourable sense. Trites (1992:186) admits that the word meek “appears offensive to many, including some Christians.”

In so far as meek is “offensive” because it brings to mind those who are helpless and powerless then, again ironically, it means that this beatitude has come full-circle. Defining meek as a positive, quiet strength of character is correct, yet at the same time it does a disservice to the original meaning of the beatitude. For, though the word is identified with figures such as Abraham, Hillel and (especially) Moses, the message that one should be meek in order to emulate such heroes and thereby receive God’s blessings belongs to the ‘hidden’ meaning. By virtue of the fact that, in English, meek has taken on the more “offensive” characteristics Hebrew speakers once associated with ων’, this beatitude is able to retain its dual meaning.
Chapter Six

Blessed are those who hunger and thirst for righteousness sake
for they shall be satisfied

Matthew 5.6: μακάριοι οἱ πεινώντες καὶ δυσπύγνες τὴν δικαιοσύνην, ὃτι οὗτοι χορτασθήσονται

II.6.1 The Fourth Beatitude: An Allusion to . . .
With each of the preceding beatitudes a relatively clear case can be made for allusion to Isaiah 61. The first (and the third) alludes to the ~ywln"[] of Isaiah 61.1. The second beatitude alludes to the ~ylibea] of Isaiah 61.2. Black makes the point that the only place in Isaiah 61 which has relevance for the hungry is in verse 6b: WlkeaOT ~ylAG lyxe (Black 1967:157). It would certainly be possible for an allusion to eating to produce a beatitude addressed both to those hungering and thirsting (cf, Jn 6.35, where the bread of life means an end to hungering and thirsting), but this seems forced.

Yet, part of the investigation of this beatitude is to examine whether it is truly addressed to those who hunger and thirst (as per Matthew) or simply to those who hunger (as per Luke). In any event, it seems unlikely that this beatitude has been inspired by Isaiah 61.6. If this beatitude is not drawn from Isaiah 61 then from whence was it inspired?

II.6.1.1 An Allusion to Isaiah 65
Lohmeyer sees in this beatitude an allusion to the eschatological time mentioned in Isaiah 49.10 and 65.13, saying, “wie beides die Not der Armen ist, so ist auch die Sättigung ihre eschatologische Hoffnung” (Lohmeyer 1967:87). Let us examine Isaiah 65.1 first. This verse is consistent with the theme of reversal of fortunes present in Isaiah 61 to which the beatitudes subscribe. It says:

~T,a;w> WTV.yI yd:b'[] hNEhi Wb'[r>Ti ~T,a;w> Wlkeayo

129 You will eat the wealth of nations.
Therefore this is what the Sovereign LORD says: “My servants will eat, but you will go hungry; my servants will drink, but you will go thirsty; my servants will rejoice but you will be put to shame.” (NIV)

In this verse, both Targum Jonathan and the Peshitta follow a similar targumic tradition. This has been altered in the Peshitta only where the language needed to be changed to accommodate the Syriac dialect. Targum Jonathan also adds extra interpretive elements in this verse while the Peshitta stays with the more literal translation.

A comparison of the most important verbs in the versions is instructive.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Hebrew</th>
<th>Targum</th>
<th>Peshitta</th>
<th>LXX</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Wlkeayo</td>
<td>!Wlk.yE</td>
<td>nwLK)N ![wlkan]</td>
<td>φάγονται</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>WTv.yl</td>
<td>!WTv.yl</td>
<td>nwtSN ![wtXn]</td>
<td>πίονται</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wb[r&gt;Ti</td>
<td>!WnP.k.Ti</td>
<td>nwNPkt ![wnpkt]</td>
<td>πεινάσετε</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wam'c.Ti</td>
<td>!Whc.Ti</td>
<td>nwhct ![whct]</td>
<td>δυσφήσετε</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wxm'f.yl</td>
<td>!Wdx.y&lt;</td>
<td>nwdxN ![wdxn]</td>
<td>εὐφραίνονται</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wvb.Te</td>
<td>!Wth]b.Ti</td>
<td>nwKBt ![wkbt]</td>
<td>αἰσχυνθήσονται</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

---

130 ydb[ ah !whct !wtawn !wtvn ydb[ ah !wnPkt !wtavn !wlkan ydb[ ah ahla ayrm rma ankh anh ]lm !wkbt !wtawn !wdxn

131 Targum Jonathan renders Isaiah 65.13 as: aY"[;yvir: !WTa;w> !Wlk.yE aY"q;yd1c; ydEb.[; ah' ~yhiOla/ y"y> rm;a] !n:d>KeB. !Wth]b.Ti aY"[;yvir: !WTa;w> !Wdx.y< aY"q;yd1c; ydEb.[; ah' !Whc.Ti aY"[;yvir: !WTa;w> !WTv.yl aY"q;yd1c; ydEb.[; ah' !WnP.k.Ti.
In every case the Peshitta uses the same vocabulary to translate the Hebrew verbs as does Targum Jonathan, with one exception.

The last verb, Wvb.Te, is translated in Targum Jonathan as Wthjb.Ti, but the Peshitta uses the Syriac equivalent of Wkb.Ti. In this instance the Peshitta has given a very loose translation while Targum Jonathan has given a much more literal one. There is no influence here from the Septuagint, whose aἵσχυνθήσοθε is a very close translation of the Hebrew word Wvb.Te. Thus, in contrast to the Hebrew, Septuagint and Targum Jonathan, which all read that the ungodly will hunger, thirst, and be ashamed, the Peshitta says that they will hunger, thirst, and weep.

This may help explain the presence of blessed are those who weep for they shall laugh in Luke’s version of the Beatitudes. Perhaps it is not an alternate version of Matthew 5.4, as some have supposed (Dupont 1969:267-268; Kilpatrick 1946:15; Lachs 1987:73; et al), but, together with blessed are those who hunger now for they shall be satisfied, Luke is giving a double allusion to a (Peshitta like) targumic rendering of Isaiah 65.13. This is not actually a new theory, but an ancient one. Tertullian (Adv Marc 4.15) appeals to Isaiah 65.13 when discussing the text of Luke 6.21 (Dupont 1969:267) suggesting that the latter is an allusion to the former.

Circumstantial encouragement for thinking that Luke has given an allusion to Isaiah 65 can be garnered from the fact that Luke pairs his beatitudes with a corresponding list of woes. Isaiah 61.1-2 merely gives promise of a positive reversal of fortunes for God’s people. Isaiah 65.13-14, on the other hand, contrasts the blessings promised to God’s servants with the judgement which is coming on those who would not obey God’s call (Is 65.12). It is possible that Matthew also intended an allusion to Isaiah 65.13. In that case Matthew has created a double allusion by addressing his beatitude to those who hunger and thirst, while Luke speaks of those who hunger and weep.

---

132 You will be put to shame.
133 You will be ashamed.
134 You will weep.
II.6.1.2 An Allusion to Isaiah 49

Are there any readings among the Dead Sea Scrolls which link Isaiah 61 with Isaiah 65? The evidence does not really suggest this. However, the allusion to Isaiah 61.1 in 4Q521 is linked with a promise to those who are hungry. As mentioned earlier (see §II.1.1.3), this scroll gives valuable proof that in apocalyptic circles the words of Isaiah 61 were combined with various other prophecies (such as Da 7) in the formulation of messianic expectation.

Lines 12 and 13 of 4Q521 fragment 1, column 2 (as reconstructed by Puech; 1992:475) appear as follows:

```
rfby ~ywn[ hyxy ~ytmw ~yllx apry za .12
hf[y ~[b] b[rw lhny ~yvw[dq ] v[ ] .13

12. then he will heal the sick and the dead he will resurrect; (to) the poor he will preach good news.
13. [ho]ly ones he will lead and the hungry among them he will do
```

Added to the list of things inspired by Isaiah 61.1-2 which the Messiah will do is to care for the hungry. The fragment breaks off at this point and therefore it is impossible to be absolutely sure to which scripture these words are an allusion. However, it is unlikely that this is an allusion to Isaiah 65.13. Rather, the use of the verb lhñ in juxtaposition with the word b[r brings to mind Lohmeyer’s other suggested allusion, that this refers to Isaiah 49.10. This verse reads:

```
~ylm; y[eWBm;-[w> ~gEh]n:y> ~m'x]r:m.-yKi vm,v'w" br"v' ~Key:-aOlw> Wam'c.y1 aOlw> Wb[r>y1 aOl ~leh]n:y>

They will neither hunger nor thirst, nor will the desert heat or the sun beat upon them. He who has compassion on them will guide them and lead them beside springs of water (NIV).
```
The obvious reason why Isaiah 61 would be linked with Isaiah 49 is that, in addition to the fact that both refer to the people of God as ~ywln[(Is 49.13, 61.1), they both concern the eschatological year of Jubilee. Where Isaiah 61.2 refers to hwhy !Acr"-tn:v., Isaiah 49.8 speaks of the !Acr" t[e. The !Acr" t[e was understood to be a time where God is positively disposed to act on behalf of his people. Even to this day Jewish people pray that their prayers will be considered by God to be in the !Acr" t[e (Singer 1962:235), knowing that at such time God will intervene in power.

II.6.1.2.1 Isaiah 49 as a Focal Point of Messianic Expectation

The !Acr" t[e of Isaiah 49.8 as well as other terminology from the same chapter was greatly influential in the formulation of first-century messianic expectation. Elsewhere among the Dead Sea Scrolls, the synonymous term !Acr" d[eAm can be found. 1QH 15.15 says: You alone created the righteous and from his mother’s womb you prepared him for the time of favour ![Acr" d[eAm]. This is an allusion not only to Isaiah 49.8 but 49.5 as well.

Pesiqta Rabbathi s 31 gives evidence of a rabbinic tradition which understood the Servant-song of Isaiah 49.8ff as a prophecy of the Messiah (Jastrow [1903] 1992:962). This passage also had great messianic importance for apocalyptic circles Attributes accorded to the Servant in Isaiah 49 were used to describe the eschatological Son of man of Daniel 7. Thus, the Ethiopic book Enoch describes him as the light of the nations (48.4; cf, Is 49.6); named before the Lord of spirits (48.3; cf, Is 49.1); hidden before him (God) (48.6; cf, Is 49.2); kings and mighty ones are to rise up and bow down to him (46.4ff; 62.1ff; cf, Is 49.7) (Jeremias 1971:272). Similarly, IV Ezra 13.26 alludes to Isaiah 49.2 when it says, concerning the Son of man, that he will be preserved; six verses later 49.3 is alluded to when God calls him my servant (Jeremias 1971:272).

Jesus also used Isaiah 49 as a springboard for teaching. For instance, his maxim about dispossessioning the strong man (Mt 12.29) is an allusion to Isaiah 49.24. It is evident that
he saw his ministry of casting out demons as a fulfillment of God’s promise to take back captives and save the children of Israel (Is 49.25).

Isaiah 49 also has prominence among the writings of the New Testament. The Apostle Paul declares that the prophecy of the !Acr" t[e has been fulfilled through Christ (2Co 6.2). Simeon, upon seeing baby Jesus, inserts the words φῶς εἰς ἄποκάλυψιν ἑθνῶν (LXX: Is 49.6) into a song filled with allusions to Isaiah (Lu 2.29-32). Paul and Barnabas also quote Isaiah 49.6 in Acts 13.47. Paul alludes to Isaiah 49.7 in 1 Corinthians 1.9. There are a couple of instances of allusion to Isaiah 49 in the book of Revelation (Rev 7.16-17 = Is 49.10; Rev 16.6 = Is 49.26).

Some modern interpreters see the description of the Servant in Isaiah 49 (particularly vss 5-6 and 8-12) as a type of Moses (Davies 1964:117). This is especially interesting in light of the discussion in the previous chapter over Jesus as the new Moses.

Isaiah 49 was used in combination with Isaiah 61 to form a prophetic picture of the messianic future. The Epistle of Barnabas, for instance, joins Isaiah 49.6-7 with Isaiah 61.1-2 as prophecies concerning Christ. Thus, a beatitude alluding to Isaiah 49 does not discount the idea that, at heart, the Beatitudes are an allusion to Isaiah 61. Yet, the importance of this contribution goes far beyond showing that the Beatitudes allude to a Isaiah 61 conflated by verses from Isaiah 49. Tying the fourth beatitude specifically to the prophecy of Isaiah 49.10 has implications for understanding what its meaning would originally have been.

II.6.1.2.2 Isaiah 49.10: A Prophecy for Living Water

By New Testament times, Isaiah 49.10 was understood as a prophecy for an outpouring of the waters of everlasting life. In Revelation 7.16-17 saints who have come out of the great tribulation are promised:

Never again will they hunger; never again will they thirst. The sun will not beat upon them, nor any scorching heat. For the Lamb at the center of the throne will be their shepherd; he will lead them to springs of living water. And God will wipe away every tear from their eyes (NIV).
The final phrase is a free translation from Isaiah 25.8:

\[
\text{And the Lord GOD will wipe away tears from every face.}
\]

The rest is from Isaiah 49.10. A comparison of the two passages gives interesting insights.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Isaiah 49.10</th>
<th>LXX Isaiah 49.10</th>
<th>Revelation 7.16-17</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Wb[r&gt;yl aOl</td>
<td>οὐ πεινάσουσιν</td>
<td>οὐ πεινάσουσιν έτι</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wam'c.yl aOlw&gt;</td>
<td>οὐδὲ δυσπησοῦσιν</td>
<td>οὐδὲ οὐδὲ</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>br&quot;v' ~Key:-aOlw&gt;</td>
<td>οὐδὲ πατάξει αὐτούς</td>
<td>οὐδὲ μὴ πέσῃ ἐπ’ αὐτοὺς</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>vm,v&quot;w&quot;</td>
<td>καῦσμων</td>
<td>οὐδὲ πᾶν καῦμα</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>~m'xjr:m.-yKi</td>
<td>ἄλλα ὁ ἐλεεῖν</td>
<td>ὅτι τὸ ἀνὰ μέσον τοῦ θρόνου</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>~gEh]n:y&gt;</td>
<td>αὐτοὺς παρακαλέσει</td>
<td>ποιμανεῖ αὐτοὺς</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>~ylm; y[eWBm;-l];w&gt;</td>
<td>καὶ διὰ πηγμῶν ὕδατῶν καὶ ὀδηγήσει αὐτοὺς</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>~leh]n:y&gt;</td>
<td>ἀξεῖ αὐτοὺς</td>
<td>ἐπὶ ζωῆς πηγμᾶς ὕδατῶν</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
The Septuagint seems to have read the Hebrew word $\sim \text{gEh} n:y >$\textsuperscript{135} as $\sim \text{mex} n:y >$\textsuperscript{136} and this alone shows that the writer of Revelation is quoting from either the Hebrew text or a targum. The verb $\text{ghn}$ is routinely used for driving livestock as a shepherd (e.g., Ge 31.18; Ex 3.1) and $\sim \text{gEh} n:y >$ has been paraphrased in Revelation as $\pi\omicron\mu\omicron\nu\ominus$ in order to bring out the paradox of the shepherd being a lamb. The slight, but significant, change of $\text{springs of water}$ to $\text{springs of living water}$ allows for a theological metaphor based on the fact that $\text{living water}$ is an idiom for $\text{running water}$ (Gesenius [1847] 1979:272).

The use of $\text{living water}$ as a physical symbol of a spiritual truth was embraced in ancient Judaism and incorporated into the regulations regarding baptism and ritual immersion. Thus, in the New Testament we find baptism normally being done at a river.

Jewish $\text{mikvoh}$ had to have $\text{living water}$ (which could include rain water), in contrast to stagnant water (Siegel et al 1973:169).\textsuperscript{137} $\text{Living water}$ was necessary for purification to be effective.

\textsuperscript{135} $\text{He will guide them.}$

\textsuperscript{136} $\text{He will comfort them.}$

\textsuperscript{137} The Mishnaic requirements for $\text{mikvoh}$ were also incorporated into the regulations at Qumran. Water acceptable for ritual immersion was rendered unacceptable if there was not enough to cause a ripple (CD 10.11). This is in agreement with the mishnaic requirement of 40 $\text{seahs}$ (c 480 litres) of water for $\text{mikvoh}$ ($\text{mMikv}$ 7.1). This can be seen in 1QS 3.4-5, which equates the rivers and oceans with ritual immersion baths, saying that those who reject the $\text{Yahad}$: $\#x;\text{r" yme lAkB. rheJ\'yl aAlw> tArh\'n>W yMiy:B. vDEq;t.yl aAl}$ [He will not be sanctified by seas or rivers, nor cleansed by any water of purification].
A good illustration of the connection between the living water used in the mikvot and the spiritual life that comes from God himself can be seen in the comments of Rabbi Akiba over Jeremiah 17.13. In the beginning of this verse God is called laer"f.yl hwEq.mi.\(^{138}\) The fact that God is also called ~yYlx;~ylm; rAqm.\(^{139}\) later in this verse made it natural for Rabbi Akiba to make a play on the word hwEq.mi, pronouncing it hw<q.mi, which allowed him to use the mikveh as a simile for God: $wrb Xwdqh @a ~yamjh ta rhjm hwqmh hm larXy ta rhjm awh\(^{140}\) (mYoma 8.9). God is thus the purifier of Israel because he is the source of living waters.

Peter is evidently thinking in Aramaic when he states (1Pt 3.20-21) that the water by which Noah and his family were saved symbolizes baptism that now saves you (NIV). In Aramaic, the verb σφζω is rendered by the verb hy"x'. In other words, the aY"Y:x; aY"m; of baptism now !WTa; !yYEx'. Thus, living water was understood to be synonymous with salvation. In so far as the fourth beatitude is pointing back to the eschatological promise of Isaiah 49.10 it is promising the release of living water/salvation in the messianic, eschatological year of Jubilee.

The early church absorbed this Jewish understanding of living water into their regulations for Christian baptism. Thus, in the Didache (7.1) baptism is commanded to be done ἐν ὑόατι ζῶντι [in living water]. Perhaps the word play or the idiom itself was not well understood by Gentiles, because the next verse (7.2) states:

ёαν δε μη ἔχης ὑδωρ ζῶν, εἰς ἄλλο ὑδωρ βάπτισου· εἰ δ' οὐ δύνασαι ἐν ψυχρῷ, ἐν θερμῷ.

But if you do not have living water (running water), baptise in other water; and if you are unable to use cold (water), then in warm (water).

---

\(^{138}\) the Hope of Israel

\(^{139}\) A fountain of living water
This does not constitute two separate commands but two versions of the same command in synonymous parallelism. Because *living water* is *running water* it is generally cold water. Warm water is, presumably, *standing water* which was not normally acceptable for baptism or *mikvoth*. The writer here acknowledges the symbolism of being baptised in *running/living water* but feels that it is not an overriding consideration which would preclude baptism if it were unavailable.

**II.6.2 Reconstruction of This Beatitude**

Getting the form this beatitude would have had in either Hebrew or Aramaic is not easy. As has been demonstrated, the words τὴν δικαιοσύνην probably reflect the later editorial work of *RMatthew*. The question is, is this beatitude addressed to those who hunger or to those who hunger and thirst? Luke’s *blessed are those who hunger* now is regarded by many to better reflect the original beatitude. Lachs (1987:74) suggests that there is sufficient data to support this.

The question must be asked: Will reconstructing these possibilities in Hebrew and Aramaic help solve the issue? In order to answer this an attempt to reconstruct each of the possibilities will be necessary. Only reconstructions which can maintain the three-beat rhythm already shown to be valid will be considered.

**II.6.2.1 Blessed are those who hunger**

Let us first explore the possibility of the short form: *Blessed are those who hunger*. Luke gives this as: μακάριοι ὁι πεινῶντες νῦν, ὡς χορτασθήσοντες.¹⁴¹ There are two witnesses to the shorter address from among the *Nag Hammadi* writings.

The Gnostic text, *The Exegesis on the Soul* (135.16-18), has a version of this beatitude much like that found in Luke. It is paired with an unusual version of the beatitude for those who mourn:

> The Saviour said: ‘Blessed are those who mourn, for it is they who will be pitied; blessed, those who are hungry, for it is they who will be filled.’ (Tuckett 1986:52)

¹⁴⁰ *As the mikvah purifies sins, so the Holy One, blessed be He, purifies Israel.*

¹⁴¹ *Blessed are those who hunger now for you will be satisfied.*
The first of these beatitudes may be a conflation of Matthew 5.4 and 5.7 or it could be purely a deviation from 5.4 by the tractate’s author (Tuckett 1986:54). The second is evidence not only that the words for righteousness were not original but that the words and thirst were added later as well. On the other hand, this could be a conflation of readings from both Matthew and Luke. The fact that the beatitudes for those who mourn and those who hunger are joined here also indicates that there was a time when the two were paired together (i.e., the third beatitude has either switched places with the second or was unknown by this community).

The *Gospel of Thomas* (69) also gives evidence that this beatitude was addressed only to those who hunger: Fascinatingly, Thomas has a completely unique version, which says: 

Blessed are those who hunger, so the stomach of the one in want may be filled.142

The fact that neither of these *Nag Hammadi* versions adds the word now to their rendition of this beatitude indicates that the now has only been included in the Greek text of Luke for emphasis and does not go back to the original saying source. The version contained in *The Exegesis of the Soul* looks too suspiciously like a conflation of readings from Matthew and Luke. It may represent an independent tradition, but it would be foolish to assume that it does. The situation is slightly different with the *Gospel of Thomas*. Unfortunately the text extant is probably not in the original language, but is only a Coptic translation. This Coptic text of the *Gospel of Thomas* represents a version which has been translated from a lost Greek source written in the early second century (Howard 1995:205).

142 ἀνακαίνεται οἱ καίοντες, ἵνα ευνατσίον γίνη τῆς ἑπετοὺς.
Fieger maintains that a connection exists between the *Gospel of Thomas*, as a whole, and the Sahidic Coptic version of the Gospels, saying: “Der innerkoptische Vergleich wird zeigen, daß das koptische ThEv eine überraschende Vertrautheit mit der sahidischen Evangelienübersetzung verrät” (Fieger 1991:7). However, the text of logion 69, shows virtually no influence from the Coptic versions of the New Testament. Firstly, Thomas begins his beatitude with the word ἡμακαριος. This represents the Greek word μακάριος, absorbed directly as a loan word into the Coptic of Thomas. 143 This is in contrast to the Sahidic Coptic version of the New Testament which uses Ναϊατοςψ in Matthew 5.6, and Ναϊατθηςψ in Luke 6.21 (Fieger 1991:200), as well as the Boharic Coptic version, which has Σοψ Ιατοςψ (Horner [1905] 1969:24).

Scholars are divided as to whether the original language of this collection of sayings was Greek, Aramaic or Syriac (Howard 1995:205). Fieger (1991:200) considers that Thomas is providing eine freie Kombination aus Mt 5,6 und Lk 6,21 dar. In agreement with Luke the beatitude is addressed only to those who hunger; in agreement with Matthew the verb in the apodosis is in the third person plural. Yet, the Coptic text of logion 69 also gives evidence that the Greek source of the *Gospel of Thomas* is unacquainted with Matthew 5.6 or Luke 6.21 and goes back to an independent Aramaic tradition. In place of ΔΕ, by which the Coptic New Testament renders ὁτι (Fieger 1991:200), Thomas has ΙΝΑ, which indicates an underlying Greek text which read: μακάριοι οἱ πεινώντες ἵνα αὐτοῖς χορτασθήσονται. This reminds one of Polycarp’s version of the fifth beatitude: ἐλεάτε, ἵνα ἐλεηθῆτε (Phil 2.3; see also §II.2.3.2). A ὁτι clause would not be changed lightly into a ἵνα clause. It makes more sense to suppose that the Greek text standing behind Thomas has been translated from Aramaic, since Δ> can be translated either by ὁτι or ἵνα.144

143 Thomas employs ΟΥἡμακαριος with a singular subject in logion 7, 18, and 19; ἡμακαριος with a plural subject in logion 49, 54, 68 and 69.

144 Similarly, mistranslation of Δ> was suggested by Burney to account for the difference between the macarism in Matthew 13.16, ἵμων δὲ μακάριοι οἱ ὄφθαλμοι ὧτι βλέπουσιν [blessed are your eyes because they see], and μακάριοι οἱ ὄφθαλμοι οἱ βλέποντες & βλέπετε [blessed are the eyes that see what you see] in Luke 10.23 (Burney 1925:145).
For vocabulary, the only real contender for reconstructing πεινώντες into Hebrew is the verb בְּרֵיחַ; in Aramaic it is the verb בְּרֵיה.

II.6.2.1.1 The Hebrew Reconstruction of Blessed are Those Who Hunger

The Hebrew reconstruction can go more than one way. In a Hebrew reconstruction it is not difficult to find a way to get the necessary three beats even when it is addressed only to those who hunger. Using Psalm 146.7 as a guide, where ~ybi[er>]l' receives two stresses (Davidson 1970:453) one way to reconstruct this beatitude in Hebrew is: ~ybi[er]>h' yrEv.a;

In actual fact, a case can certainly be made that the Greek plural form, πεινώντες, does not necessarily represent a Hebrew plural form. In Isaiah 29.8 the word בְּרֵיה', which also receives two beats, is translated in the Septuagint with a plural form. Thus, בְּרֵיה' yrEv.a; could also be correct.

II.6.2.1.2 The Aramaic Reconstruction of Blessed are Those Who Hunger

Actually, this same evidence could be used to show that the Greek text of Thomas was translated from Hebrew since ו, can also be translated either by וּל or וּלְ. Both Aramaic ד> and Hebrew ו, are ambiguous and both can be translated (among other things) either as a relative pronoun or a conjunction (Jastrow [1903] 1992:275;1505). An interesting example of this phenomenon, coming from the other direction, can be found in Matthew 6.5, where the Arabic version of the Diatessaron uses a relative pronoun to translate Syriac ә, which was used to translate the וּל of the Greek text (Black 1967:71). Thus, it is possible to translate both יָלִיבְּש' אָוָּה.ל! וֹנְיָהּ and ~y[iB.] ! Why> ~h,v, as in order that they (those in want) may be filled. The fact that the words יְנִמְטוֹנִי [the stomach of the one in want] come at the end of logion 69 is an indication that they were added later in order to clarify who it is who will be filled. Thomas is noted for inserting secondary elements into earlier material (Klijn 1992:50).

145 בְּרֵיה' (Davidson 1970:221)

146 The LXX, incorrectly, has πίνοντες. It seems obvious that this is a mistake for πεινώντες.
Burney used *dekaphenin* for his Aramaic reconstruction of πελώντες. This is in agreement with the all the Syriac versions of this beatitude as well as the Christian Palestinian version which have σύν. The Aramaic versions prefer, in this case, to place d before the participle, resulting in !ynlp.k'D>, though, when Targum Jonathan translates the Hebrew participles ~ybi[er> and b[er" it does so without the relative pronoun.

It is unlikely that οἵ πελώντες represents a plural emphatic form. Jastrow gives no indication that there ever would be a form like aYN"n:p.K' ([1903] 1992:659, 660). If, however, one were to decide to use a singular emphatic form then examples are available. Targum Jonathan uses an"p.K; in Isaiah 29.8 and 58.7 as well as an"yπiKe in Psalm 107.9.

It should be noted that Targum Jonathan translates ~ybi[er>, not by !ynlp.K', but by !ynlπiK. (e.g., Ps 146.7). The closest one can come to !ynlp.K' in the targums appears to be the interesting textual variant among manuscripts of Targum Jonathan in Psalm 107.5. Though many manuscripts read !ynlπiK,, there are manuscripts which use ~ynlπiK. and even some with ~ynlπp.K (Jastrow [1903] 1992:659).

Unlike the Hebrew words ~ybi[er>h' and b[er"h', the Aramaic word an"p.K; would not, alone, receive two beats and there is no plural emphatic form. The relative pronoun in Palestinian Aramaic is D> (Stevenson 1962.21) and a form such as !ynlπiK.D> would only have one accent. Therefore, there are basically three ways to reconstruct blessed are those who hunger as a three-beat, Aramaic hemistich.

147 !ynlp.k'D>

148 An emphatic feminine singular participle, htνpk, does appear in a Galilean Aramaic text on a silver amulet but this dates from the seventh century AD (Beyer 1984:372).
The first is to add the full relative pronoun, resulting in: !ynlypik.-yled. This form reflects Biblical Aramaic (cf, Dn 7.18). The Job Targum found at Qumran utilizes yiled as a relative pronoun exclusively (Sokoloff 1974:22). The Genesis Apocryphon mostly uses yiled ; D attached to the next word occurs about ten percent of the time (Sokoloff 1974:22). Throughout the Aramaic portions of the Dead Sea Scrolls it is yiled which is normally used (Sokoloff 1974:22) but this may merely reflect good Imperial Aramaic and not the spoken form even of those who wrote these texts. Even if this does not represent the popular speech of first-century Jews in Palestine it would still be possible for such a phrase to be uttered by Jesus.

The Beatitudes, as opposed to general speech and ordinary discussion were meant to have a more austere quality and to be remembered as theological pronouncements (Betz 1995:94). To achieve this a more formal Aramaic might have seemed fitting.

The second way is to suggest that oi` pelvnut`z represents an emphatic plural form such as aY"n:p.K'. Though examples of an emphatic singular form, such as an"p.K', can be seen, no examples of a plural emphatic form have surfaced. The fact that no examples of aY"n:p.K' have been found does not mean this form did not exist. By way of example, while researching the possibilities for an Aramaic reconstruction of the eighth beatitude a need was seen to find a passive form of the verb @d:r>. The Peshitta of Matthew 5.10 uses the passive form wPdrt). Because Jastrow ([1903] 1992:1453) gives no examples of Jewish Aramaic using either the 'Ithpe 'al or the 'Ithpa‘el constructions for the verb @d:r> it would have been possible to conjecture that the Peshitta is using a form which would not have been used in Palestine. But, Jastrow (as invaluable a tool as his dictionary is) is not enough by which to form a definitive conclusion, as the form @drt can be seen among the Dead Sea Scrolls (4Q521 1.3.1). Thus, aY"n:p.K' !AhybWj is a possibility, though not a good one.

149 wPdrt
The third, and best possibility is that a compound tense has been formed using \( \text{hw"h} \). Thus, !ynlypiK. Awh]D: !AhybeWj has the required three beats. An analogous occurrence of a compound tense in biblical Aramaic can be seen in Daniel 5.19. The perfect of \( \text{hw"h} \) joined to a participle can be used to express a prolonged state (Stevenson 1962:57). The use of the perfect compound tense occurs occasionally in Old Testament Aramaic. It is characteristic of the Palestinian Talmud and Midrashim of the period, though not of targumic Aramaic (Stevenson 1962:57). It is also characteristic of Christian Palestinian Aramaic (Schulthes 1924:88) as well as Palmyrene (Rowley 1929:98). An example of the compound tense being used specifically with hunger can be seen in Rabbi Rabba’s comments concerning David and Bath Sheba (San 107a). The idiom he uses for David to describe his lust is: anypyyk hwh yrcyl.\(^{150}\)

Therefore, it is possible to reconstruct a beatitude addressed only to those who hunger, having three beats, in either Hebrew or Aramaic. This leads to the conclusion that the blessed are those who hunger of Luke and Thomas may have been based on an Aramaic or Hebrew source.

II.6.2.2 Blessed are Those Who Hunger and Thirst

The pairing of hunger and thirst is not uncommon in the New Testament (e.g., Mt 25.35-44; Ro 12.20; 1Co 4.11; Rev 7.16).

\(^{150}\) My inclination hungers.
II.6.2.2.1 The Aramaic Reconstruction of Blessed are Those Who Hunger and Thirst

Burney defends the inclusion of the words καὶ διψῶντες from the standpoint that it is necessary for the first hemistich to have three beats. He suggests that the reconstruction of this beatitude into Aramaic should be: *tiubehón dekaphénín wèsiahiáyn dehinnún mitméláyn* (Burney 1925:166). Lohmeyer agrees, noting that *wèsiahiáyn* is necessary “oder dreihöllen Rhythmus wie den Gleichklang zwischen wèsiahiáyn und mitméláyn” (Lohmeyer 1967:86).

If the reconstruction were *!yhic.w> !ynlypik.D> !AhybeWj* the advantage would be that it fits the rhythmic pattern and that it matches the wording of this beatitude in Matthew.

II.6.2.2.2 The Hebrew Reconstruction of Blessed are Those Who Hunger and Thirst

In order to suggest a three-beat Hebrew reconstruction for a hemistich addressed to both *those who hunger* and *those who thirst* the forms must be indefinite. Both plural and singular forms can be employed. Thus, both *amec'w> b[er]> yrEv.a*; or *~yamc.w> ~ybi[er]> yrEv.a*; are possible reconstructions. If we use 4Q521, which uses *b[r* in its allusion to Isaiah 49.10, as a guide, then the former reconstruction which is neither plural nor definite is best. On the other hand, the plural form *~yamc* is used in 1QSb 1.6 to speak of those who thirst for *living water*.

---

151 !ylim't.mi !WNyhiD> !yx;c'w> !ynlp.k'D> !AhybeWj

152 According to Barthélemy and Milik's reconstruction of the text: *~yameC.[l*; *~yYlx*; *~ylm*; *rAc[].y*; *aAlw> ~l'A*[ r[Aqm. ]*. 
The interpretation of this beatitude, in the *Gospel of Thomas* (log 69)\(^{153}\) which addresses those who voluntarily allow themselves to be hungry (i.e., fasting) in order for others to have food must stem from a preaching tradition going back to the primitive Christian church. This same theme is found in another early Christian work: the *Shepherd of Hermas*. In a discussion on fasting, Hermas is told by Jesus that when he fasts, the amount of money he has saved on food should be distributed to the poor (Sim 5.3.7). There is certainly a similarity between Thomas and Hermas here which seems to indicate some sort of indirect connection. Therefore, it is likely that Hermas is passing on teaching in this passage which has a common ancestry with logion 69 in the *Gospel of Thomas*.

Though Thomas doesn’t mention *those who thirst*, the interpretation he gives may, indirectly, be evidence for the inclusion of these words in a Hebrew reconstruction. A Hebrew version could easily have existed which read: \textit{amec}'w> b[er" yrEv.a;}. Someone might have hit upon the idea of changing the Hebrew \textit{amec}' to \textit{~aec}' in order to read it as: \textit{blessed are those who hunger and fast}. This then would naturally have led to the teaching present in logion 69 and Hermas. Unfortunately, there is no corroborating textual evidence that such a reading ever existed.

\section{II.6.2.3 Blessed are those who hunger and thirst for righteousness}

The history of the Greek text of the Beatitudes reviewed in the first portion of this thesis showed that the words τίνων δικαίωσόννυν were only added to the fourth beatitude later by \textit{RMatthew}. For reasons of rhythm Burney (1925:166) rejected the inclusion of these words in his Aramaic reconstruction. There is no way to include the word \textit{righteousness} and still keep to the three-beat rhythm he suggested. Yet, it is this mention of \textit{righteousness} that caused Black to continue to see an allusion to Isaiah 61 (Black 1967:157). For example, \textit{righteousness} features prominently in Isaiah 61.3, where the \textit{!AYci ylebea} will be called \textit{qd}<C,h; yleyae}.\(^{154}\)

---

\(^{153}\) \textit{Blessed are those who hunger, so the stomach of the one in want may be filled.}

\(^{154}\) cf, Targum: \textit{ajv.Wq yber>b.r}; Syriac: \textit{\[tw\textsubscript{2}y\textsubscript{2}d] }\textit{rkn}; LXX: γενεὰς δικαίωσόννυνς.
It is certainly possible that RMatthew was restoring a word which was already associated with this beatitude in Aramaic. A version quoted by Clement of Alexandria (Strom 5.70.1) may reflect the influence of an Aramaic Vorlage, as the first strophe seems to have read: μακάριοι οἱ πεινώντες καὶ διψώντες τὴν ἀλήθειαν [blessed are those who hunger and thirst after truth]. The reason for suggesting that this reading stems from an Aramaic version is the mention of truth rather than righteousness. This variant reading can be accounted for by positing that Clement is translating the Aramaic word aj'v.Wq, which can mean both truth and righteousness. In fact, Targum Jonathan translates qd<C,h; in Isaiah 61.3, not with aY"q;ydIc; (which, for example, he uses in 11.5) but with aj'v.Wq. This may only represent an Aramaic translation of the existing Greek text of Matthew. In Aramaic, Matthew 5.6 could have been translated: aj'v.Wql. !yxic;D>w> !ynlypik.D> !AhybeWj.155

Lindsey (1973:XXII) reconstructs the first hemistich of this beatitude into Hebrew as: hq'd'c. ybe[er> yrEv.a; In so doing he is acknowledging the shorter address of Luke as representing the more authentic beatitude and that Matthew (as in 5.3 with the addition in spirit) has again given a spiritualizing addition. Lindsey’s reconstruction of this hemistich, incidentally, has the three beats sought for the rhythmical pattern. This leads to the possibility that the original hemistich was blessed are those who hunger which was then expanded in different segments of the church to both blessed are those who hunger and thirst and blessed are those who hunger for righteousness. Perhaps RMatthew was conflating the Greek text in order to restore a reading known from a Hebrew or Aramaic version current in other sections of the Jewish-Christian church.

The result of this investigation proves nothing absolutely. The best that can be said is that some possibilities are better than others. Based on the fact that it is more likely that Jesus delivered the Beatitudes in Aramaic rather than Hebrew and that Luke often best represents the original wording (which are both highly debatable points) the Aramaic reconstruction offered for the first hemistich will have the shorter address. The Greek

155 It well may be that Clement of Alexandria is indeed quoting from an Aramaic source but that this source
text of *OMatthew* did not include the words τὴν δικαιοσύνην and did contain the words καὶ δυσώντες. The evidence up to now has suggested that Matthew’s version of the Beatitudes preserves a Greek translation of a Hebrew version. Therefore, the Hebrew reconstruction of the first hemistich will be in accordance with the longer address.

II.6.2.4 Reconstructing the Apodosis

II.6.2.4.1 Burney’s Theory: *For They will be Satisfied with Good*

In Burney’s reconstruction the second hemistich is too short, comprising only two beats. He therefore suggested that the word τιὰτα\(^{156}\) (based on Is 55.2) be inserted after mitmelaýin which would then make this line read: *for they will be satisfied with good* (Burney 1925:168). This is certainly possible. One of the eighteen benedictions, which goes back to New Testament times, petitions God to *satisfy us with your good(ness)*\(^{157}\) (Singer 1962:50). This theme also appears among the Dead Sea Scrolls in 4Q418, fragment 81, line 19, which says: hkydy tmkxmw bwj bwr bht[bXw almtp.\(^{158}\) The Hebrew word bAj corresponds to the Greek word ἀγαθός, which is used as a substantive in just this sense later in the Sermon on the Mount when Jesus declares that ὁ πατὴρ ὑμῶν ὁ ἐν τοῖς οὐρανοῖς δώσει ἀγαθὰ τοῖς ἀιτοῦσιν αὐτὸν\(^{159}\) (Mt 7.11). Unfortunately there are no variants which introduce a form of the word ἀγαθός into this beatitude.

On the other hand, in Mary’s *Magnificat* (Lu 1.46-55) one can see a parallel to this beatitude which does contain the substantive ἀγαθός. In Luke 1.53 Mary sings that πενῶντας ἐνέπλησεν ἁγαθῶν πλούσιον ἐξαπέστειλε κενοίς.\(^{160}\) It must not be missed that this line occurs in a beatitude-like list of reasons why future generations μακαριοῦσι\(^{161}\) Mary (vs 48).

\(^{156}\) bj;  
\(^{157}\) You will be filled and satisfied in the abundance of good(ness) and the wisdom of your hands.  
\(^{158}\) You will be filled and satisfied in the abundance of good(ness) and the wisdom of your hands.  
\(^{159}\) Your Father in heaven will give good things to those who ask him.  
\(^{160}\) He has filled the hungry with good (things); the rich he has sent away empty.  
\(^{161}\) will call blessed
The antithetic parallelism which contrasts God’s treatment of the hungry with his treatment of the rich brings to mind Luke’s beatitude of the hungry (6.21), balanced by his woe to those who are full (6.25; cf, vs 24). Perhaps an allusion is being made to Psalm 107.9 which says: bAj-aLemi hb'[er> vp,n<w].

A possible witness for good being part of this beatitude can be found in the paraphrase of this beatitude offered in the Pseudo-Clementine Recognitions (II 28.5) which promises that those who hunger and thirst for aeternis bonis justitiae will be filled. Dupont mentions the possibility that this goes back to a reading in the Gospel of the Hebrews (Dupont 1973:377; He credits Descamps with the theory but is not convinced of it himself) whose version of this beatitude contained the word good. This cannot be used as positive proof of an original beatitude with the word good (particularly as it seems to have been a part of the first hemistich rather than the second) but it certainly makes the idea very credible.

II.6.2.4.2 The Clementine Model: For They will be Satisfied with Food

There were obviously those who felt that the beatitude as it stands is too ambiguous and therefore added an indirect object to alleviate this. The full text of Stromata 5.70.1, mentioned earlier, reads:

Εἰ τοίνυν λογικόν ἡμῖν βρῶμα ἢ γνώσις εἶναι συμπεφώνηται, μακάριοι τῷ ὄντι κατὰ τὴν Γραφὴν οἱ πεινώντες καὶ δυσπέπτες τὴν ἀλήθειαν· ὃτι πληροῦσονται τροφῆς ἀιώνιον.

If then it is agreed among us that knowledge is the food of reason, ‘blessed truly are they,’ according to the scripture, ‘who hunger and thirst after truth, for they shall be filled with everlasting food.’ (Tuckett 1986:55).

In Aramaic this version of the fourth beatitude would probably be rendered something like: ~l;[’ ~xel. !ylim;t.yl !WNhid> aj’yvWql. !yhic;w> !ynlypiK.

162 And the hungry He fills with good things.
163 the eternal good of righteousness
This departs from a three-beat rhythm by adding words which give a four-beat rhythm to each half.

Were one feeling the need to add the word *food* to this beatitude, a better idea would be to look in the targum to Psalm 132.15 for an analogy. The targum changes the *h'yn<Ayb.a, ~x,l' [:yBif.a,*164 of the Hebrew text to *am'x]l; ![W[B.s.yl ah'k'yvix]w:*165 This would suggest the possibility of: *am'x]l; ![W[B.s.yl ![WNhiD>.

II.6.2.4.3 Without Addition: *For They will be Satisfied*

When faced with the question of whether or not Jesus would have ever said *they will be satisfied* without adding an indirect object to the statement the answer is definitely, yes. In fact, for an analogy one only needs to look ahead in the Sermon on the Mount to Matthew 7.7 which says: *ask and it shall be given to you* (NIV). Therefore there is no reason to conclude that Jesus could not have said *they will be satisfied* (and not added some sort of direct object).

Burney’s use of ![yll;m.t.mi to translate χορτασθήσονται is a minor problem. The likelihood is that the verb *ylem*. would cause a Greek translator to use the verb πληρώω rather than χορτάζω. There is the possibility that Burney is correct and χορτασθήσονται has been used to translate an original ![yll;m.t.mi, but there is no compelling reason to abandon the verb ![b;s.. All the Syriac versions attest nw{BSN ![W[bsn] and the Christian Palestinian version has nw{BSY. ![W[bsy] The latter leads to what should (but cannot for reasons of rhythm) be a preferred reconstruction of χορτασθήσονται, namely: ![W[B;s.yl. That having been said, the form χορτασθήσονται appears in the Septuagint to the Hebrew Bible only in Psalm 36 (37).19 where it translates the Hebrew word

---

164 *The poor I will satisfy with bread.*

165 *The poor He will satisfy with bread.*
W[B;f.yl. In turn, W[B;f.yl is rendered by Targum Jonathan not by !W[B;s.yl, but rather by !y[ib.s'.

II.6.2.4.3.a Reconstructing For They will be Satisfied in Aramaic

The plural participle, !y[ib.s', used in the targum of Psalm 37.19 is the key to solving the problem of how to have three beats in the apodosis of the Aramaic reconstruction of this beatitude. Participles are often used in Targum Onkelos and Targum Jonathan to render the Hebrew imperfect tense, particularly when the word denotes a continuous state in either the past or the future (Stevenson 1962:56). What the targums generally do not do is use a compound tense with the participle, though such was normal Aramaic usage (Stevenson 1962:57).

A relative clause must contain “a compound tense when there is a compound tense in the associated principal clause” (Stevenson 1962:59); but not vice-versa. Consider the way the relative clause abec' aw"h]-yDl in Daniel 5.19 governs the clauses which follow it. The use of compound tenses can be found in the Aramaic portions of the Dead Sea Scrolls. For example, in the Genesis Apocryphon 20.8 Abraham narrates his journey, saying: amwrdl lza tywhw.166

More to the point, analogous use of an imperfect form of hw"h] with a participle also occurs. 4Q541 6.2 says: b]yx hwht alw.167 4Q435 1, as reconstructed by Wise, contains vmmr !wwhy168 (Eisenman & Wise 1992:35). Numerous other examples can also be found throughout the Dead Sea Scrolls as well as in material found at Wadi Murabba’at (Beyer 1984:561). Since it has already been suggested that the Aramaic reconstruction of the first hemistich needs a compound tense, using a compound tense in the apodosis may give the beatitude a good balance.

166 And I traveled south.
167 And you will not be guilty
It must also be mentioned that another possibility for rendering the apodosis is to add the word dyti[] before the participle. Expressing the future with the word dyti[] was not uncommon and examples can be seen among the Dead Sea Scrolls (Beyer 1984:666). An example from biblical Aramaic can be seen in Daniel 3.15.

Generally the construction is dyti[] + l + infinitive, but dyti[] with imperfects and participles can also be found (Stevenson 1962:51; Jastrow [1903] 1992:1129) An example of dyti[] + participle can be seen in an inscription found at a fourth-century Galilean synagogue: htwcm db[m dyt[dw hvydq hrt] !dhb htwcm db[d !m lk l[ hmlv yhy (Beyer 1984:386).169 An interesting example from Targum Jonathan (Hab 2.1) reverses the usual syntax and has dyti[] ~yaeq' an"a] as the translation for hb'c.y:t.a, of the Hebrew. This would then suggest an Aramaic reconstruction such as: !y[ib.s' dyti[] !WNhiD>.

Though the use of as dyti[] is certainly a possibility for the Aramaic reconstruction of the apodosis the more prolific use of the compound tense with the participle seems to favour using that construction. Therefore, the apodosis will be rendered: !y[ib.s' !Wwh.yl !WNhiD>. The use of !Wwh.yl in this reconstruction is based on the form !wwhy found in 4Q435 1, vocalized in accordance with Targums Yerushalmi I and II which both employ !Wwh.yl in Genesis 3.15.170

---

168 they will be darkened
169 Peace be on all of those who made contributions in this holy place and (on) those who will make contributions.
170 The Aramaic, Imperfect, 3rd person, plural form of hwh is difficult to nail down for this reconstruction. The Old Testament Aramaic form is hAh/l, (e.g, Ezr 6.10). A short form, !Ahyl, appears in Targum manuscripts published by Kahle (Stevenson 1962:74). Kahle's suggested that this vocalization, based on Yeminite manuscripts with supralinear pointing, retains “the original preformative vowel;” Stevenson (1962:13) suggests that this may merely be an alternative way to represent vocal shewa. Thus, it might better be rendered as !Ahy>, as found in Targum Onkelos (e.g, Ge 49.11). In Genesis 3.15 the Venedig edition of Yerushalmi II published in 1511 has !y’w>h.yl (Dalman 1927:6). Bereshith Rabba has both !Wwh.yl and !Ahy> (Odeberg 1939 2:39). Other possibilities from Rabbinic literature include
II.6.2.4.3.b Reconstructing For They will be Satisfied in Hebrew

There remains the problem of the Hebrew reconstruction of the apodosis. How can the Hebrew arrive at a three-beat rhythm? A reconstruction such as $W[B'yI \sim h,v.$ has the advantage of using a biblical form but, alas, does not have three beats.

All along it has been conjectured that Matthew’s source has had access to a Hebrew version of the Beatitudes which was based on an original Aramaic version and that the Hebrew translator changed and even added words to be able to retain the three-beat rhythm. Thus, a reconstruction of the fourth beatitude that does not keep to the rhythmic pattern of the others must be disallowed.

$Ww\{y, \text{ and } Ww/l, (Frank 1975:98). Though speakers of Aramaic in Palestine used forms with a l prefix it seems better to use one with a y prefix (which is normally used in the targums) as the former more properly represents Babylonian Aramaic (Frank 1975:28).
As in Aramaic, in Mishnaic Hebrew the future tense was also often rendered by the use of dyti[i] plus l prefixed to an infinitive (Frank 1975:11). This would allow for an apodosis reading: [:Bof.li dyti[l] ~h,v.,\(^{171}\) This reconstruction has the severe disadvantage of not being identifiable as a direct allusion to anything in the Bible. On the other hand, use of this way of speaking is routinely found in contexts speaking of the days of the Messiah or the hereafter (Jastrow [1903] 1992:1129). In fact, the idiom abol' dyti[l], with the Messianic future in mind, is so common that it often appears abbreviated as l'[l]. In so far as this beatitude was associated with righteousness the words of Rabbi Tarphon seem appropriate in this context: aAbl' dyti[l], ~yqiyDl;c;lv, ~r"k"f. !T;m;v, [d:w>]\(^{172}\) (Ab 2.21). Though the use of dyti[i] is a tempting solution to the problem it is even less attractive in a Hebrew reconstruction than in an Aramaic one. The fact that it depends on an idiom not associated with the Hebrew Bible (particularly of Isaiah) is a significant weakness. A Hebrew version of this beatitude from the first century would probably mirror the Aramaic version above (particularly if it was translated from Aramaic).

There does happen to be an analogous occurrence of a compound tense pairing the participle of [bf with an imperfect of hy"h' in Rashi’s commentary to Sanhedrin 107a. Explaining Rabbi Jehudah’s comment that David changed his night couch into a day couch Rashi says: ML EZA YHA YEYEJ AMF ZJOZŠO SBZ AEJZ JDL NFJB FŠIO ZOZO EJEZ NFJE.\(^{173}\) Though Rashi is writing a thousand years after Jesus the idiom [:bef ahey>v, can still be considered acceptable – albeit with great misgivings. Applying this to the fourth beatitude the apodosis would read: ~y[iB.f' Why> ~h,v.,

\(^{171}\) An example using the Hiph’il construction of [bf can be found in Numbers Rabba s 14, which says (ref to Pr 14.14): wykrdm [btfhl dyt[ giys alm awhv blh wtwa [This self same heart, because it is full of refuse will be satiated (i e, sick) from its own ways.].

\(^{172}\) And know that the gift of reward of the righteous will take place in the future to come.

\(^{173}\) He was performing his sexual relations in the day(time) in order that he would be satisfied from sex and

129
II.6.2.5 Aramaic and Hebrew Reconstructions:

Aramaic

!y[ib.s' !Wwh.yl !WNhiD> !ynlypiK. Awh]D: !AhybeWj

Hebrew

~y[iB,f' Why> ~h,v, ~yaimec.W ~ybi[er> yrEv.a;

II.6.3 The Meaning of this Beatitude

The Beatitudes proclaim the arrival of the Kingdom of God, the beginning of the eschatological Year of Jubilee and the revealing of God’s Messiah. One should not make too fine a distinction between the activities of God and his Messiah. Jesus may have intended that those who hunger (and thirst) were to be satisfied by him.

In John 15.7 Jesus uses the divine passive to express that the petitions of his disciples will be answered, saying: δὲ ἐὰν θέλητε αἰτήσασθε καὶ γενήσεται ἵματιν.¹⁷⁴ For Jesus there was no distinction between himself and the Father answering requests. Thus, in John 14.12, 14 Jesus says it is he who will do whatever is asked, while in John 16.23 it is the Father who will give whatever is asked.

Whether addressed to those who hunger or those who hunger and thirst the fourth beatitude alludes to Isaiah 49.10 in the context of Isaiah 61.1-2. The prophecy for the end of hungering and thirsting in Isaiah 49.10 was, in Second-Temple times, understood to be the result of the arrival of the Messiah who gives living water. The switch from God to the Messiah being the giver of living water was not unique to Jesus but was part of first-century messianic expectation.

At Qumran, the theme of springs of water in the desert was extended in the Thanksgiving Scroll (1QH). In column 16 the psalmist praises God who has made him a source of living water. Throughout this column imagery from various messianic/eschatological

---

¹⁷⁴ not think on women all day long.
prophecies are used freely. He is a \textsc{rc,ne}^{175} (line 6; Is 11.2) planted in an \textsc{hy}^{176}ci
\textsc{#ra<}^{176} (line 4; Is 53.2) which becomes a \textsc{~l'a}[ \textsc{tf;j}; \textsc{m}; ]^{177} (line 6; Is 60.21, 61.3).

Tapping into the \textsc{~y}l\textsc{x}; \textsc{~y}lm; (line 7) the tree becomes a \textsc{~l'a}[ \textsc{raqm}. (line 8;
later called \textsc{~y}l\textsc{x}; \textsc{raqm}.; cf, Ps 36.10). This tree is hidden and not \textsc{bv'x.n}<^{178}
(line 11; Is 53.3). Thus, the tree becomes a \textsc{~y}l\textsc{x}; \textsc{~y}lm; [;\textsc{wbm}; (line 16; Is
49.10). In a similar vein, Revelation 22.1-2 refers to the \textsc{potamo.} \textsc{udatos} \textsc{zwh}^{179} from
which the tree of life is nourished.

Perhaps this theological milieu of the Messiah being a source of \textit{living water} is what
prompted Jesus to declare \textit{k}α\textit{th}ως \textit{e}iπεν \ ή \textit{grap}h,̓̄ \textit{p}otam\,οι \textit{ek} \, \textit{t}ης \, \textit{k}ολλ\,\textit{ia}ς \, \textit{αύτο}υ
\, \textit{r}ε\textit{υ}σ\,\textit{ou}\textit{sw}\,\textit{in} \, \textit{udatos} \, \textit{zwithios}^{179} (Jn 7.38). John interprets this to be a reference to the Spirit
(v 39). John may be seeing here a reference to Isaiah 44.3: \textit{I will pour water on the
thirsty land, and streams on the dry ground; I will pour out my Spirit on your offspring,
and my blessing on your descendants.}

The promise of the apodosis of this beatitude, that \textit{they will be satisfied}, was probably
understood by those in the early church as referring to \textit{eternal life}. The only other
instance of \textit{choriasto}̲̅\,\textit{sw}̲̅̅\,\textit{ta}̲̅\,\textit{sw}̲̅̅\,\textit{ta} in the Septuagint outside of Psalm 36 (37).19 occurs in Tobit
12.9b. Manuscript S reads: \textit{oι} \, \textit{p}o\textit{io}\,\textit{u}\textit{nt}e\textit{es} \, \textit{e}l\textit{e}m\,\textit{mos}\,\textit{ou}\textit{ny}̲̅̅ \, \textit{choriasto}̲̅\,\textit{sw}̲̅̅\,\textit{ta} \, \textit{zwhis}.^{180}

Connecting the verb \textit{chorist},\textit{a}̲̅\,\textit{z}ω̲̅̅ to \textit{el}̲̅\textit{e}m\,\textit{mos}\,\textit{ou}̲̅̅\,\textit{ny}̲̅̅ may have been suggested by the linking of
\textit{alms giving} to \textit{fasting} in verse 8. It would not be too difficult to think that from these
words a doctrine of fasting in order to give to the poor could be derived. The Archangel
Raphael declares to Tobit and his son that such a person will \textit{be satisfied} (by God) with

\begin{itemize}
\item[174] \textit{Ask whatever you wish, and it will be given you} (NIV).
\item[175] \textit{shoot}
\item[176] \textit{dry ground}
\item[177] \textit{eternal planting}
\item[178] \textit{esteemed}
\item[179] \textit{As the Scripture has said, streams of living water will flow from him} (NIV).
\item[180] \textit{Those who give alms will be satisfied with life.}
\end{itemize}
(eternal) \textit{life}. From the perspective of the Gospel of John, if Jesus were to satisfy \textit{those who hunger and thirst} with anything it would most likely be with \textit{life} (Jn 4.10, 14; 6.27, 35, 51-58; 7.37-38; 10.10).

II.6.3.1 The Fourth Beatitude and Fasting

Goulder (1974:275) sees in the fourth beatitude’s two-fold address of \textit{hungering} and \textit{thirsting} a reference to \textit{prayer} and \textit{fasting}. This is based on the theory that Matthew 6.5-18 is commentary on the fourth beatitude (Goulder 1974:262f, 275). Goulder has the right idea that the portion of the Sermon on the Mount following the Beatitudes is commentary on the last four of them but has incorrectly understood that commentary on the first four beatitudes is contained in Matthew chapter six. Nonetheless, he is probably correct to see a connection between the fourth beatitude and fasting.

Rabbi Tanchum bar Hanilai (Sanh 100a) lauds those who make themselves to go hungry in pursuit of Torah, saying:

\textit{abh \textasciitilde lw[b w[bfy hbqh hzh \textasciitilde lw[b hrwtl wmc[ by[rmh lk}

\textit{All who make themselves hungry for the sake of Torah in this world will be satisfied in the world to come.}

Such sentiments must have been around in the days of Jesus as he seems to acknowledge this when, in John 5.39, he says:

\textit{\epsilon\rho\alpha\upsilon\nu\nu\tau\epsilon\tau\varepsilon\tau\varsigma\varsigma\varsigma\gamma\rho\alpha\phi\alpha\varsigma\varnothing\iota\tau\iota\varsigma \delta\omega\kappa\epsilon\iota\tau\epsilon\varepsilon \epsilon\iota\nu \alpha\upsilon\tau\alpha\iota\varsigma \zeta\omega\eta\eta \alpha\iota\omicron\nu\iota\omicron\nu \epsilon\zeta\chi\epsilon\iota\nu.}

\textit{You diligently study the Scriptures because you think that by them you possess eternal life} (NIV).

He goes on to say that he is the source of \textit{life}. Jesus also spoke of his words as both \textit{spirit and life} (Jn 6.63) and equates his teaching with the Law of Moses (Jn 7.16-19).\textsuperscript{181}

\textsuperscript{181} In the Babylonian Talmud (Chag 3a) some disciples express their dependence on their rabbi's teaching by exclaiming: \textit{lytwv wna $ymym}, and Sanhedrin 107a suggests that when David writes: \textit{Even my close friend, . . . who shared my bread, has lifted up his heel against me} (Ps 41.9), he is speaking of Ahithophel and that \textit{bread} in this context means teaching.
II.6.3.2 Reinstating the word Righteousness

Though the word *righteousness* was not originally a part of this beatitude it was later joined to it for a reason. What needs to be answered is:

1. Why was *righteousness* associated with this beatitude?
2. What is meant by *righteousness*?

The answer to the first question may have to do with the way the promise that they will be *satisfied* was associated with a certain kind of *righteousness*.

Going back to Tobit 12.9, in which the word χορτάσθῃσανταί appears, the connection of this promise to those who give to the poor may be the clue to unlocking this puzzle. Tobit 12.9 is slightly different in manuscripts B and A than in S: οὶ ποιοῦντες ἐλεημοσύνας καὶ δικαιοσύνας πληθήσονται ζωῆς. It is not being suggested that when *RMatthew* added the word *righteousness* to this beatitude he was wanting to create an allusion to Tobit. Rather, the intention was (as well as by adding the third beatitude) to create an allusion to Psalm 37. Psalm 37.19 promises that the righteous *will be satisfied* in the day of hunger. 37.21 says that *the righteous give generously* (NIV). In 37.26 they are described as always generous. Both Rashi and the Mtzudat David commentaries in the Rabbinic Bible have the same comment on this: *they are generous to the poor*. In each case the word translated as *generous* is ניאא. The root of this word is נא, which means *mercy*. Perhaps the use of the verbs ἐλεέω and χορτάζω in Tobit 12.9-10 also indicates an allusion to Psalm 37.

In any event, what can be determined is that the association of the fourth beatitude with *righteousness* is linked to an interpretation of this beatitude which encouraged fasting and giving food to the poor. Certainly, the *Gospel of Thomas* understood it to be this way.

*Righteousness* is often used as a synonym for almsgiving (cf, the use of δικαιοσύνης and ἐλεημοσύνης in both Tobit 12.9 and Mt 6.1-2). Giving food to the poor is an action which is specifically associated with the righteous in Rabbinic literature. Consider, for

---

182 Those who give alms and charity [righteousness] will be filled with life.
example, the rabbinic treatment of Psalm 118.19, which states: \( qd< c\cdot yrE[] v; yli- Wxt.Pi \)

\text{Hy" h}d\text{<Aa }\sim \text{b'-aboa}^{'}.\text{183} \text{ These gates came to be identified as gates for righteous people.}

Both the Rashi and Eben Ezra commentaries in the Rabbinic Bible are only giving an interpretation that reaches back to much more ancient times when they specify that those who enter these gates are the righteous.\text{184} Therefore, when the \textit{Midrash Tillim} to this verse says that \textit{b[r lykam lv r[Xh hz},\text{185} it is affirming that \textit{the righteous are those who feed the hungry.}

Divine reward for those who feed the hungry and poor are themes present in Isaiah 58.7-10. In fact, Isaiah 58.8 says that as a result of doing this: \( ^\wedge q,d>ci \ ^\wedge yn<p'l. \)

\text{186} \text{ Targum Jonathan translates } ^\wedge q,d>ci \text{ as } ^\wedge t'w"k.z:: \text{ The word at'Wkz}^>(\text{from the root ykez}>, \text{to be pure or clear}) \text{ is a term which grew from meaning innocent or righteous through theological usage to mean, good deeds; from that to mean merit; from that to mean merit which engendered divine favour (Jastrow [1903] 1992:402). Thus, your righteousness will go before you was, in the targum tradition, taken to mean: your merit will cause divine favour to go before you.}

It is therefore not unlikely that in a Jewish-Christian context, \textit{those who hunger and thirst for righteousness} would be taken to mean \textit{those who seek right standing with God.}

Dupont quotes from an article by Coggan suggesting that the difference between the meaning of this beatitude in Aramaic and in Greek is that the former would mean “Blessed are those who earnestly desire God’s vindication, God’s deliverance;” the latter

183 \textit{Open for me the gates of righteousness; I will enter and give thanks to the LORD (NIV).}

184 \textit{Rashi: NEB NJAB NJXJDWE [The righteous come through them]; Eben Ezra: XDWE AFE EGF [ And this is he (who is referred to): the righteous].}

185 \textit{This is the gate of the one feeding the hungry.}

186 \textit{Your righteousness will go before you.}
would mean “Blessed are those who earnestly desire to be righteous” (Dupont 1973:357). Coggan’s notion of an Aramaic understanding of *righteousness* would normally fit such an eschatological context but not here.

Attempts to see in this the more Pauline sense to the word *righteousness* (i.e., *imputed righteousness*) are somewhat counterproductive.\(^{187}\) The emphasis is on doing things which bring one *right standing with God*.

Such an understanding seems to have been present among early Jewish-Christians. This can be seen in the way this beatitude appears in the *Gospel of Thomas*. The important point to notice about Thomas’ version is that the subject is no longer one who is in need but one who is living a life of voluntary self-sacrifice. The changing of this beatitude from a promise of reward to *those who hunger* into an exhortation to fast in order to bless the needy with food could not have come from the Greek text of Matthew 5.6.

### II.6.3.3 The Original Meaning

Jesus seems to have meant this beatitude to be understood on three levels. Firstly, as with the previous beatitudes, Jesus is proclaiming divine favour for those who are poor, dispossessed and hurting. Those who literally hunger and thirst are addressed but it goes much deeper than that. This goes to the heart of Jesus’ ministry. Every physical action had spiritual significance. The feeding of the multitudes\(^{188}\) was not merely to show that Jesus had power to perform miracles (cf, Lk 23.8). He was literally satisfying the hungry. This is why, in each of these passages the verb χορτάζω\(^{189}\) is used (Mt 14.20; 15.33, 37; Mk 6.42; 8.4, 8; Lk 9.17; Jn 6.26). At the same time he was also sending a message *for them with ears to hear* that he is the bread of life.

Other passages using χορτάζω [i.e., Matthew 7.27 (the Syro-Phonecian Woman), Luke 15.16 (the Prodigal Son) and Luke 16.21 (the Rich Man and Lazarus)] affirm the

---

187 Dupont (1973:358) lists, among others, Weiss (B), Weiss (J), Zahn and Billerbeck.
188 Mt 14.13-21; 15.32-39; Mk 6.30-44; 8.1-10; Lk 9.10-17; Jn 6.1-14
189 This as opposed to the more common verb πίωπλημι [used around 150 times in the Greek Bible (Dupont 1973:46)] or ἐμπύπλημι (John does use this word in 6.12) or even κορεννύμι (which Luke, for example, is certainly acquainted with; cf, Ac 27.38).
importance of this theme in Jesus’ teaching, and may possibly be allusions by Jesus to the fourth beatitude. Analogous to this is his opening the eyes of the blind man as a physical act which sent a spiritual message. After this miracle Jesus proclaims that he came not only to make blind eyes see but seeing eyes blind. Pharisees listening to this understand that he is speaking metaphorically of spiritual blindness. And so, with a wink and a nudge, they ask: Are we also blind?

In the fourth beatitude Jesus is not only addressing the poor who have no food, he is sending a message to those who are not hungry and thirsty. The message is that in their search for the Kingdom of God they need to emulate those who are hungry and thirsty. This is directly in line with the way Jesus told his disciples that they needed to become like children to enter into the Kingdom of God. Seen in this light the beatitude could be paraphrased as: Allow the hungry and thirsty to come unto me for such will be satisfied in the Kingdom of God. Unless you humble yourselves and become hungry and thirsty you shall never be satisfied.

II.6.3.3.4 How is This Beatitude to be Understood?

As with the three former beatitudes the original ‘open’ meaning has been obscured or lost. However, the spiritual addition of righteousness should not cause interpreters to ignore this beatitude as a promise to those who are physically hungry, signifying how God loves and cares for them. Even as Christians seek an understanding of what it means to hunger and thirst after righteousness the interpretation of this beatitude seen in the Gospel of Thomas should be kept in mind. To paraphrase by way of James 2.14-19:

What good is it my brothers, if a man claims to hunger after righteousness and has no deeds? Can such righteousness save him? Suppose a brother is without daily food. If your hungering after righteousness doesn’t cause you to meet that need what good is it? Allow your hungering after righteousness to motivate you even to go hungry yourself so that the stomach of the one in need may be filled. Then, truly, God will satisfy your hunger.

The words hunger and thirst are very graphic and therefore quite effective for giving a word-picture of seeking God. Trites (1992:187) is typical in pressing the metaphor to
say, “one of the authentic marks of a developing Christian is a perennial hunger and thirst to know more of God personally.”

Related to this is the desire to see righteousness established in this world. The fact that this is a legitimate way to interpret the second beatitude indicates that imposing such a meaning on this one can not be criticized too harshly.
Chapter Seven

*Blessed are the merciful for they will receive mercy*

Matthew 5.7: μακάριοι οί ἐλεήμονες ὅτι αὐτοὶ ἐλεηθήσονταί

II.7.1 The Fifth Beatitude: Beginning of a Change in Focus

As suggested at the end of the last chapter, a noticeable change takes place with this beatitude. The former beatitudes address the *dispossessed, rejected* and *oppressed*, promising them that God has come to intervene in their circumstances. Yet, at the same time the former beatitudes challenge those who are not in this class to become like such people and that in the Kingdom of God human values and priorities are reversed. In short, the message of the first four beatitudes is that the blessings of God belong to the *poor, humble, penitent, hungry ones* and – to those who humble themselves to become like them.

Now, a deliberate change of focus occurs. In this beatitude the one addressed is the one in a position to give mercy, not *the poor*, who are in need of such mercy. What had been an understated implication in the previous beatitudes becomes the primary directive. Instead of addressing those in circumstances beyond their control the final four beatitudes are promises to those who (as shall be seen) actively participate in the Kingdom/Year of Jubilee.

II.7.2 Allusion to Isaiah 49

It is not that the *poor* have been forgotten with this beatitude. The opposite is the case. The allusion to Isaiah 49.10 in the fourth beatitude becomes, with the fifth, a double allusion. The lifting up of the *poor* as role models inherent in the previous beatitudes leads directly to a beatitude for those to whom God wants to bestow *mercy*. This is because it is to the *poor* (they *who hunger and thirst*) that God intends to give *mercy*. 
Isaiah 49.10 suggests that the reason they will no longer hunger and thirst is that God is $\sim m'y\lambda r:m.$\textsuperscript{190} That the poor are to receive this mercy is made all the more plain in Isaiah 49.13b: $\sim xer:y> wY''nl\lambda w: AM[; hwhy \sim x;nl-yKi.\textsuperscript{191}$

Those who first heard this beatitude would have had no problem recognizing the natural progression taking place. The Dead Sea Scrolls demonstrate that the creation of sacred hymns emerging from the conflation of Isaiah 49.10, 13 and 61.1-7 was not uncommon. For example, the conflation of these scriptures [Flusser does not suggest Is 49.10 but does add Is 52.7 and 66.2 (Dupont 1969:98)] seems to be behind two lines of praise to God in the Thanksgiving Scroll (1QH 18.14-15):

\[
hk'y\lambda m,x\lambda r; bAr\lambda. \sim y\lambda wi[n"\lambda r\Fe b;l. hk'\lambda b.Wj [ ] r\Fe b'mi
\\hk'T.mia[K;[ ]]
\sim l'A[ tx;m.f\lambda i. \sim y\lambda libe\lambda a w; x;W\lambda r yae[K'd.nll. ] r\Fe AqM'mi [ ]]
\]

14: [...] according to Your truth, preaching good news [...] of your goodness to preach good news to the poor for the abundance of Your compassion,
15: [...] from the fountain [...] for the troubled of spirit, and mourning into eternal rejoicing.

Similarly, in 4Q434 1.2.3 we find:

\[
wykrd ta twar\lambda \sim h\lambda ny[ xqpyw \sim y\lambda w\lambda n x wymxr bwr

In the abundance of his mercy he comforted the poor and opened their eyes to see his ways

II.7.3 Hebrew and Aramaic Reconstruction of this Beatitude

II.7.3.1 The First Hemistich

\textsuperscript{190} he who pities them

\textsuperscript{191} For the LORD comforts his people and will have compassion on his afflicted ones (NIV).
The terminology for the reconstruction is more complicated than one might think. The adjective ἐλεήμων is used in the Gospels only here. Just how should the plural, ἐλεήμονες, be reconstructed? Several possibilities present themselves.

II.7.3.1.1 Aramaic Reconstructions of the First Hemistich

II.7.3.1.1.a ἐλεήμονες = ynEm'x.r:m.

The Old Syriac and Peshitta versions agree that this beatitude should read: nwhYBw+ )MXr nwwhN nwwhYyL(d )NMXrML.

The Harclean Syriac translates the first hemistich similarly: )NMXrM nwhYBw+. Each of these Syriac versions utilizes the word )N3M1X8r0M to render the Greek participle ἐλεήμονες. This corresponds to the Aramaic word an"m'x.r:m.

The plural form of which is ynEm'x.r:m. An example of the latter form can be found in Esther 1.2 of Targum Sheni (Jastrow [1903] 1992:841).
In Exodus 34.6 God proclaims himself, among other things, *merciful* and *gracious*, using the words: \[\text{!WNx;}w> \sim Wxr:. \]

This is quoted in Psalm 103.8 and alluded to in Psalm 111.4. The Peshitta in each of these references, employs \[\text{!NMXrM}. \]

James, who alludes to so many of the beatitudes also alludes to Exodus 34.6 when he says (5.11c):

\[\text{\overset{\circ}{\text{p}}\text{o\lambda\upsilon\sigma\pi\lambda\alpha\gamma\nu\omicron\upsilon\circ}} \overset{\circ}{\text{\varepsilon\sigma\tau\iota}} \overset{\circ}{\text{\delta\kappa\nu\omicron\omicron}} \kappa\alpha\iota \overset{\circ}{\text{i}} \overset{\circ}{\text{oik\tau\iota\rho\mu\omicron\nu}} \omicron. \]

James is not quoting the Septuagint, which there reads that the Lord is: \[\text{oik\tau\iota\rho\mu\omicron\nu} \kappa\alpha\iota \text{\varepsilon\le\epsilon\mu\omicron\nu}. \]

To reconstruct the first hemistich patterned after the Harclean Syriac (i.e., without the direct object indicator) produces: \[\text{ynEm'x.r:m. !Ah}ybeWj. \]
This is not the most likely reconstruction but certainly a possibility.

II.7.3.1.1.b \[\overset{\circ}{\text{\varepsilon\le\epsilon\mu\omicron\nu}} = \overset{\circ}{\text{aY''n:m'x.r:}}. \]

---

196 The full quotation of what he calls himself in verse six is: \[\text{ds,x,-br:w> \sim ylP;a; } \%r<\text{a, !WNx;}w> \sim Wxr: \text{lae hwhy hwhy tm,a/w< [The LORD, the LORD, the compassionate and gracious God, slow to anger and abounding in love and faithfulness (NIV)].} \]

197 *anmxrm*; The Peshitta is inconsistent, sometimes it seems to use this word to translate \[\sim Wxr: \]

and sometimes to translate \[!WNx: \] (cf, Ex 22.26b \[\text{ynla' !WNx;}-y\text{Ki} = \overset{\circ}{\text{i}} \overset{\circ}{\text{m}\text{mb} \iota \iota \iota} \overset{\circ}{\text{l+M}} \overset{\circ}{\text{m}}). \]

Psalm 111.4 reverses the order, saying: \[\text{hwhy } \sim Wxr:w> !WNx:]. \]

There, the Peshitta has: \[\overset{\circ}{\text{\varepsilon\lambda\mu\omicron\nu}} \overset{\circ}{\text{\pi\xi\rho\mu\omega \wh i}} \overset{\circ}{\text{\m\nu}} \overset{\circ}{\text{\varepsilon\le\epsilon\mu\omicron\nu}} \overset{\circ}{\text{\pi\xi\rho\mu\omega}} \overset{\circ}{\text{\wh i}} \overset{\circ}{\text{\m\nu}}. \]

198 *For, the Lord is full of compassion and mercy.* The Peshitta seems to recognize this as an allusion to Psalm 111.4 and uses virtually the same words in its translation: \[\overset{\circ}{\text{\varepsilon\lambda\mu\omicron\nu}} \overset{\circ}{\text{\pi\xi\rho\mu\omega \wh i}} \overset{\circ}{\text{\m\nu}} \overset{\circ}{\text{\varepsilon\le\epsilon\mu\omicron\nu}} \overset{\circ}{\text{\pi\xi\rho\mu\omega}} \overset{\circ}{\text{\wh i}} \overset{\circ}{\text{\m\nu}} [\overset{\circ}{\text{\varepsilon\lambda\mu\omicron\nu}} \overset{\circ}{\text{\pi\xi\rho\mu\omega \wh i}} \overset{\circ}{\text{\m\nu}} \overset{\circ}{\text{\varepsilon\le\epsilon\mu\omicron\nu}} \overset{\circ}{\text{\pi\xi\rho\mu\omega}} \overset{\circ}{\text{\wh i}} \overset{\circ}{\text{\m\nu}}]. \]
Burney and Jeremias both render the first hemistich of this beatitude as: *tubehón rahímánayyáda.*\(^{199}\) Similarly, Dalman’s reconstruction is: *tubehon derahimanajja* (1922:203).\(^{200}\) The word **aynmxr** is the emphatic plural form of the masculine adjective **nymxr** used as a substantive. God is frequently called **nymxr** in both Hebrew and Aramaic rabbinic texts (Jastrow [1903] 1992:1468). The singular emphatic form, **anymxr**, can be found in the targum to Psalm 103.8 and 111.4 (both alluding to Ex 34.6). Burney, Dalman and Jeremias are influenced, by the Christian Palestinian version which renders έλεημονεσ as: **vnmnxr.**\(^{201}\)

Luke doesn’t have a beatitude for the *merciful* but Luke 6.36 says: γίνεσθε οίκτιρμονεσ καθώς καὶ ὁ πατὴρ ὑμῶν οίκτιρμων ἐστίν.\(^{202}\) Betz suggests that Luke has changed the fifth beatitude into this “maxim” (1995:133). Perhaps this is so, but McNamara (1978:135-137) has shown that these words of Jesus are probably a quotation from the Palestinian Targum. In Leviticus 22.28, in which God commands that animals and their offspring may not be sacrificed on the same day, Targum Pseudo-Jonathan contains an addition which says:

\[ \text{a[rab !ynmxr !wwht $k aymXb !mxr anad amk} \quad (\text{McNamara 1978:135)}^{203} \]

As I am merciful in heaven so be merciful on earth.

The London manuscript of this targum\(^{204}\) is only slightly different:

\[ \text{a[rab !ymxr !wwht !k aymXb !mxr anad amkyh iarXy ynb ym[} \quad (\text{McNamara 1978:137)} \]

My people, sons of Israel, as I am merciful in heaven so be merciful on earth.

\(^{199}\) **aynmxr:** !AhuyaWj

\(^{200}\) **aynmxr:** !AyhuWj

\(^{201}\) **aynmxr:**

\(^{202}\) Be merciful, just as your Father is merciful.

\(^{203}\) This same reading is also quoted in jBer 5.3,9c and jMeg 4.9,75c.

\(^{204}\) BM ms Add. 27031
The Polyglot text is different still, changing the one speaking from God to Moses:

\[
a\text{[rab} \text{!ynmxr} \text{!wwht} \text{!k aymXb} \text{!mxr} \text{!nwbаd} \text{hmkyh} \text{lаrXy} \\
ynb \text{ym}](\text{McNamara 1978:137})
\]

*My people, sons of Israel, as our Father is merciful in heaven so be merciful on earth.*

This latter quotation has too much in common with the words of Jesus to be coincidental. It is self-evident that this can help in establishing the Aramaic reconstruction of the fifth beatitude.\(^{205}\)

### II.7.3.1.1.c \(\text{\'elē\text{"}mονες} = \text{!ymix}\text{r:m}.\)

Another possibility for reconstructing \(\text{\'elē\text{"}mονες}\) would be a plural form of the Aramaic *Paēl* participle of \(\sim\text{xer}>\): \(\text{!ymix}\text{r:m}.\). This participle is never given an emphatic form. The singular participle occurs in the reconstruction of *Ah\text{\'iqar} 16(59).2* given by Kottsieper (1990:14). When used as a determined substantive it appears as \(\text{!ymix}\text{r:m.DI}\) (e.g., *Keth* 105b). A reconstruction utilizing this word would result in: \(\text{!ymix}\text{r:m.DI} !\text{AhybeWj}\). This reconstruction would meet the three-beat criterion but \(\text{!ymix}\text{r:m.DI}\) doesn’t have the support of an impressive pedigree of use in Aramaic religious texts.

### II.7.3.1.1.d Making a Choice for \(\text{\'elē\text{"}mονες}\)

Each of these possibilities have their appeal and making a choice for one over another is not easy. The weight of targumic and rabbinic evidence for an Aramaic reconstruction are in favour of one using \(\text{!m\text{'x}.r:}\). However, this does not mean that the reconstructions of Dalman, Burney and Jeremias, using \(\text{aY\text{"}n:m\text{'x}.r:}\) are necessarily

\(^{205}\) Matthew is aware of this saying and incorporates the truth of it in the parable of the unforgiving servant where (Mt 18.33) the king says to the servant: *shouldest not thou also have had mercy* [\(\text{\'elē\text{"}mονες}\) on thy
correct. Though the Christian Palestinian version of this beatitude gives certain grounds for using this form Jastrow ([1903] 1992:1468) gives no indication that the form aY"n:m'x.r: was ever used in rabbinic literature.

Neither is the emphatic form found among the Aramaic of the Dead Sea Scrolls. In fact, the oldest example of an emphatic form of the singular word !m'x.r: is only attested in an inscription in a Jewish synagogue dated to the fifth century after Christ (Beyer 1984:364).

The strength of the testimony from the Palestinian targums is also a powerful influence towards using !yn!m'x]r:. Because the words of Jesus in Luke 6.36 almost perfectly match the Palestinian targums to Leviticus 22.28 it is probable that the form !yn!m'x]r: represents the Aramaic Jesus would also have used. Dalman is probably correct to add the relative pronoun prefix to the substantive. Thus, the reconstruction of the first hemistich in Aramaic will be: !yn!m'x]r:D> !AhybeWj.

II.7.3.1.2 Hebrew Reconstruction of the First Hemistich

Though God is often called !m'x]r: in Hebrew literature, he is also called ~xer:m.h;. Sometimes both designations appear in apposition to one another. Thus, a prayer from the Jewish Morning Prayer Service addresses God as: ~xer:m.h; !m'x]r:h' ba'h' Wnybia' (Singer 1962:41).

In the Amidah, another ancient prayer that goes back to Second-temple times, God is addressed as ~xer:m.h; in the seventeenth Benediction (Singer 1962:53). Finding ~xer:m.h; as a designation for God elsewhere in the Jewish Authorized Daily Prayer

---

206 This word is normally spelled with no dagesh in the m.

207 This verse also clearly demands that the listener be merciful toward others in the same way that God is merciful to us.
Book is not difficult (e.g., Singer 1962:17, 108, 158, 217). Though references to God as
\( \sim \textit{xer:m.h;} \) are not as plentiful as those addressing him as \( !m'xjr:\) , a call to be
\( !\text{ymix}jr:m. \) \(^{208}\) would have had the same impact as a call to be \( !ynlm'xjr:\). The fact
that God is specifically designated as \( \sim \textit{xer:m.} \) in Isaiah 49.10 gives greater impetus to
the suggestion that this would have been the word in a Hebrew beatitude making allusion
to that verse.

In actual fact, there is Hebrew phrasing similar to the words in the Palestinian targum to
Leviticus 22.28 (i.e., using \( !m'xjr:\)). The Tosefta (B Kam 9.30)\(^{209}\) says: \( htx \ !mz lk \ $yl[ \sim xry \ !mxrh \ !mxr. \) \(^{210}\) On the other hand, a Hebrew text (Shab 151b)
having this same theme, using the participles \( \sim \textit{xer:m.} \) and \( !\text{ymix}jr:m. \) states it this
way: \( \sim \text{ymXh} !m \ wy[! \text{ymxrm twyrbh l[} \sim \text{xrmh lk.} \) \(^{211}\) This passage is of
particular help for establishing the Hebrew vocabulary for this reconstruction as it gives
an example of the participle \( \sim \textit{xer:m.h;} \) used substantively of a person (rather than
God). The definite, plural participle would be \( !\text{ymix}jr:m.h; \).

A first-century Jewish Christian translating the Aramaic words \( !ynlm'xjr:D> !\text{AhybeWj} \) into Hebrew might easily have said: \( \sim \text{ynlm'xjr:h'} \ yrEv.a; \). But,
someone wanting to make a more pointed allusion to Isaiah 49.10 would rather say:
\( !\text{ymix}jr:m.h; \ yrEv.a; \). Though it could be argued either way, the Hebrew
reconstruction offered here will be: \( !\text{ymix}jr:m.h; \ yrEv.a; \).

\textbf{II.7.3.2 Reconstructing the Apodosis}

\(^{207}\) Compare this with the way Tar \textit{Yer} I Lv 22.28 and Luke 6.36 bring together the designations of God as
both \textit{Father} and \textit{Merciful One}.

\(^{208}\) In Mishnaic Hebrew \( !y \) was the preferred masculine plural termination rather than \( \sim y \) (Frank 1975:7).

\(^{209}\) In reference to Deuteronomy 13.18

\(^{210}\) \textit{Each time that you are merciful the Merciful One will have mercy on you.}
II.7.3.2.1 Aramaic Reconstruction of the Apodosis

II.7.3.2.1.a The Syriac Model

With regard to the second hemistich, The Old Syriac and Peshitta versions uniformly have:  órg nxn wnh n whyl(d. 212 This can translated as: *for mercies will be upon them.* A somewhat analogous example of this type of phrasing can be found in the Kaddish, 213 which says: aY"m;v.bi yDI !AhWba] ~d"q\mi . . . !ymixjr: . . . !Akl.W !Ahl. ahey> 214 (Singer 1962:16). A more Palestinian reconstruction of the apodosis, based on the Syriac model, would be: aY"m;x.r: !Wh.yl !Ahyle[D:

II.7.3.2.1.b Burney’s Reconstruction

Burney reconstructs the apodosis as: da’dlehón hawayin rahimayyá (1925:166). 215 Instead of using the imperfect, !Wh.yl, Burney uses the participle !yylw:h’. This is in line with his consistent rendering of the Greek future tense forms in the Beatitudes by Aramaic participles. In this he is once again taking a cue from the Christian Palestinian version (Burney 1925:168), which reads: órg oYwh n whyl(d. 216

The Syriac órg and the Christian Palestinian órg represent emphatic, plural forms of the Aramaic noun am'x[r:. The use of aY"m;x.r: rather than !ymixjr: is supported by the fact that the emphatic form hyymxr appears in a targum of Exodus (1.5m) found in Egypt, written in Galilean Aramaic (Beyer 1984:332). 217

211 All who are merciful to mankind will receive mercy from heaven.
212 amxr !wwhn !whyld
213 An ancient Jewish prayer which goes back at least to the time of Jesus (Jeremias 1971:102).
214 Let there be to them and to you . . . mercy . . . from the Father in heaven.
215 aY"m;x.r: !ylw:h; !Ahyle[D:
216 aymxr !ywh! whyld; Thus CP mss A and C; ms B, discovered in 1892, has !why (Lewis & Gibson [1899] 1971:62 ).
217 Though it is dated to between the fourth and fifth centuries after Christ, it is the oldest known Galilean-targum text (Beyer 1984:331).
The positive thing about the Syriac and Christian Palestinian versions is that they have the three-beat rhythm wanted in a reconstruction. The negative thing is that it is unlikely that a Greek translator would take the construction: *relative pronoun + preposition + dative pronoun + (future) to-be form + accusative, definite noun* and translate it with *relative pronoun + nominative pronoun + future passive verb*.

II.7.3.2.1.c The Targum Jonathan Model

Targum Jonathan renders the ~m’x;r:m.\(^{218}\) of Isaiah 49.10 as: !Ahyle[] am’x]r:l.\(^{219}\) These exact words, though with a different meaning, could be used to make an Aramaic reconstruction. It would have three beats and also give an unmistakable allusion to Isaiah 49.10.

II.7.3.2.1.d Dalman’s Reconstruction

Dalman suggests: *dejihwon merahihiem’alehon* (1922:203).\(^{220}\) Instead of the noun aY”m;x.r:, Dalman uses a compound tense with the *Pa’el* participle !ymix.r:m.\(^{221}\) in his reconstruction. Since it has been conjectured that the apodosis of the preceding beatitude contains a compound tense added to the fact that these two beatitudes are already linked together to form a double allusion to Isaiah 49 this proposed reconstruction is quite tempting.

Dalman’s reconstruction works by giving a passive sense to what should be an active verb. This is because the same forms (in both Hebrew and Aramaic texts) were sometimes used interchangeably to have either active or passive meanings as the context demands.

\(^{218}\) the one who has mercy on them

\(^{219}\) Similarly, Targum Jonathan renders %mex]r:m. in Isaiah 54.10 as: %l[] am’x]r:l. dyti[’D>.

\(^{220}\) !Ahyle[] !ymix.r:m. !Ah.yID>
For example, the Hebrew text in Shabbat 151b using both singular and plural, active, Pi’el participles states: \( \text{~ymXh } !m \text{ wyl[ !ymxrm twyrbh l[ ~xrmh } \text{lk}. \)

The words \( \text{wyl'[ !ymixr:m.} \) in this passage could be translated as: they (will) show mercy on him. Jastrow ([1903] 1992:1467) correctly translates them as: (he) will be shown mercy.

II.7.3.2.1.e Jeremias’ Reconstruction

The reconstruction offered by Jeremias is: \( \text{dehinno, n yi } \text{trah } \text{amu, n} \)

(1971:24). It must be admitted that reconstructing the apodosis as \( \text{!Wmx} \text{r:t.yl !WNhid> } \) could be an excellent way to account for the Greek wording. Both this reconstruction and the Greek text have: relative pronoun + nominative pronoun + future passive verb.

In Christian Palestinian Aramaic the verb \( \text{mXr} \) has the passive meaning, receive mercy, in the 'Ethpa'el construction (Schulthess 1924:144). But, in rabbinic literature and the targums, the 'Ithpa'el of \( \text{~xer}> \) can have either an active sense or passive sense. An example from Palestinian Aramaic in which this form is used actively can be seen in yTaananith 2.65b. The men of Ninevah protest that if they won’t receive mercy (from God) they will not be merciful to the animals, saying: \( \text{!whyl[ !ymxrm !nyl !nyl[ ~xrtm tyl !ya !yrma.} \)

The passive use can be demonstrated from Targum Yerushalmi I (Pseudo-Jonathan), Exodus 33.19, where the Hebrew words \( \text{yTim.x;rlw> ~xer:a] rv,a]-ta,} \) are translated as: \( \text{ymex} \text{D> !am; am'xjr:t.mil. hyle.} \)

\[221\] All who are merciful to mankind will receive mercy from heaven.

\[222\] !Wmx\text{r:t.yl !ANhiD>}; Jeremias prefers the pronunciation of the pronoun to be !ANhi, rather than !WNhi. The latter is given by Stevenson (1962:15) as the pronunciation in Palestinian Talmudic texts, as does Jastrow ([1903] 1992:348).

\[223\] They say, “if there will not be mercy upon us, we will not have mercy upon them.”

\[224\] And I will have mercy on whom I will have mercy.
The words ![Wmx)r:t.yl !WNhiD> not only have three-beats, but they enable the continuation of the pattern of introducing the apodosis of each beatitude with the word ![WNhiD>. Yet, in order to be acceptable as part of the Aramaic reconstruction this reconstruction needs to overcome two objections.

The first objection is that an 'Ithpa‘el form of the verb ~xer> never appears among the Aramaic portions of the Dead Sea Scrolls. 'Ithpa‘el forms do appear in the Jerusalem Talmud, but not in the imperfect tense (Jastrow [1903] 1992:1467). It isn’t as if 'Ithpa‘el forms only appear in later Aramaic. The imperfect, first person plural form, ~xrtn, has been found in an Aramaic inscription discovered at Sifré (1B42), although the context it is used in is uncertain (Jean & Hoftijzer 1965:277). The problem with this example is that this inscription dates to over seven centuries before Christ (Beyer 1984:25). However, there is no need to insist that the Aramaic imperfect tense is needed just because the Greek text employs the future tense. In the Aramaic of the Palestinian Talmud and Midrashim the future function of the imperfect tense is usually supplied by the participle (Stevenson 1962:56). Thus, perhaps ![ymix)r:t.mi !WNhiD> would be better.

The second objection to Jeremias’ reconstruction comes from the fact that ~xer> is generally accompanied by the preposition l[;]. Jastrow seems to suggest that when used as a passive in the 'Ithpa‘el (or 'Ithpe‘al) construction it is always accompanied by l[;] (Jastrow [1903] 1992:1467; cf, Schulthess 1924:144). However, the Yerushalmi targum version of Exodus 33.19 mentioned above does not use l[;] in conjunction with ~xer>.

All things considered, Jeremias’ reconstruction of the apodosis seems the most reasonable and will therefore be incorporated (substituting the participle for the imperfect form) into the reconstruction offered here.

---

225 To him will be shown mercy by Him who sees. Ginsburger’s edition of Targum Pseudo-Jonathan reads: amxrtlml hyl ymxd !am l[ ~yxryaw (Ginsburger 1903:160).
II.7.3.2.2 The Original Language: Aramaic

A question which must be answered is whether or not there are any indications or signs that this beatitude was first communicated in Aramaic, as opposed to Hebrew. The key to seeing that the original saying of Jesus was in Aramaic and that Luke (or his source) was acquainted with it comes from examining Luke 6.27-36. Luke prefers to use the verb οἰκτείρω rather than ἔλεεω but this is not a problem. The Greek words οἰκτίρμονες and ἔλεήμονες are virtually interchangeable (Dupont 1973:617; cf, Ro 9.15\textsuperscript{226}). This passage is wrapped up in verse 35 saying it is necessary to love, do good and lend (to one’s enemies) and that God himself is kind (and therefore the example to follow). This verse leads into verse 36 which commands: Be merciful as your Father is merciful. This, as has been seen, is probably a quotation from a Palestinian targum.

Although the call to be merciful just as God is has both Hebrew and Aramaic parallels in rabbinic literature, the reason Jesus is able to teach that loving others, doing good, lending, being kind and merciful are implied in the command to be merciful as the Father is merciful is because they all come under the semantic range of the Aramaic verb ~X;Γ>. Thus, aside from the evidence that Jesus may be quoting from a Palestinian targum, it is clear that Jesus is teaching here in Aramaic.

II.7.3.2.2.a Mercy and the Undeserving

The parallel passage in Matthew (Mt 5.43-48) adds something not present in Luke. Where Luke 6.35 notes that God is χρηστός to the undeserving Matthew 6.45 says that God both causes the sun to rise on them and sends rain on them as well. These are no idle analogies, but ones very appropriate for word-plays reminding a Jewish audience of the mercy of God.

\textsuperscript{226} This is a quotation from the LXX of Ex 33.19b: ~χερᾶ [rv,a]-ta, yTim.x;rlw> !xoa’ rv,a]-ta, yTi'NOx;w>. 

150
Jesus does not say that God causes the sun to shine on undeserving people. Rather, he causes the sun to rise on them. In Luke 1.78, Zacharias brings together mercy with the rising sun when he explains salvation through forgiveness of sins, saying that it is: 

\[ οίς ἐπισκέψεται ἡμᾶς ἀνατολή \epsilon\] υψους. \[\text{227}\] Such a statement reflects a Jewish theology which linked mercy with the sunrise.

Where does this connection come from? It seems to stem from (or at least was influenced by) Psalm 110.3b, which says: 

\[ \text{228} \]

In Psalm 110.3 the word \( \sim \text{x},r< \) is meant in a literal sense. Yet, its proximity to the following word allowed rabbis to use this word to speak of the dawn. In fact, in the Yalkuth on Psalms (869) the word \( \sim \text{x},r< \) in this verse is taken to mean dawn and the word \( \text{rx'v.mi} \) (which actually does refer to the dawn) is taken as a Pi'el participle of the verb \( \text{rx;v'} \) resulting in the interpretation: from the womb (sunrise, east) of the world did I choose thee for me (Jastrow [1903] 1992:1467). \[\text{230}\] The Targum to Psalm 110.3 interprets the words \( \sim \text{x},r<me \) as \%l' !Wbh]r>T;yl ah'l'a/D< !ymixr:. \[\text{231}\]

Psalm 110 is not long (only seven verses) but provided an important messianic proof text that the Messiah would fulfill the functions of both king (vs 1) and priest (vs 4; cf, He 5.6). That Jesus routinely used references to this Psalm in his teachings is perhaps suggested by his use of the first verse in Matthew 22.44. \[\text{233}\]

\[\text{227} \] … because of the tender mercy of our God, by which the rising sun will come to us from heaven (NIV).

\[\text{228} \] from the womb, from the dawn of your earliest days (JB)

\[\text{229} \] womb

\[\text{230} \] yl $ytrxX \sim\text{lw}[ \text{IX wmxrm}

\[\text{231} \] The mercies of God will be hastened for you (perhaps reading \( \text{rx'v.mi} \) as \( \text{rhem;m}. \)).

\[\text{232} \] The writer of Hebrews combines Jesus’ role as Son with his role as priest by juxtaposing Ps 110.4 with Ps 2.7.

\[\text{233} \] In Mt 26.64 Jesus seems to be conflating Ps 110.1 with Da 7.13.
The statement that God causes the rain to fall on both the righteous and the unrighteous also has a connection to the word *mercy*. The Talmud occasionally uses *mercy* as a euphemism for *rain* (e.g., *Hull* 63a). The link between *rain* and *mercy* (other than the fact that people living in an arid climate would certainly see rain as a blessing) may have suggested itself from the fact that the Aramaic word *!yrlij.mi* [*rains*] is phonetically similar to the word *!yrlij.ymi* [*womb*].\(^{234}\)

*!yrlij.ymi*, in turn is synonymous with another word for *womb*: *am'xjr*: The word, *am'xjr*: can mean both *womb* and *mercy* (Jastrow [1903] 1992:1467). Metaphorical interpretations of *womb* were thus near at hand. A case in point is how the word *~x,r<* was interpreted as *!ymixjr*: in the Targum to Psalm 110.3 mentioned above.

### II.7.3.2.2.b Allusion to Leviticus

Though it would be possible to conjecture that these word-plays took place in Mishnaic Hebrew they would be much more natural in Aramaic. Matthew has also linked the command to love one’s enemies (Lk 6.27) to the command to *love your neighbour* (Mt 5.43). This is a (half) quotation of Leviticus 19.18, which says: \(^{234}\)

---

\(^{234}\) A Greek loan-word from *μήτηρ* (Arndt & Gingrich 1957:522).
Though the Hebrew verb ~x;r" can mean love (Jastrow [1903] 1992:1467), a Hebrew speaker would not use this verb when making reference to a scripture which employed the verb bh;a'. For instance, in Pirque Avoth, which gives quotes from rabbis near to the time of Jesus, possible allusions to Leviticus 19.18 occur in 1.12 and 6.1; in each instance the verb used is bh;a', while the root ~xr is only used in reference to mercy (e.g., Av 2.18). Conversely, the Aramaic targum tradition would have allowed teaching featuring the verb ~xer> to form an allusion to Leviticus 19.18 because it translates ~rEl. T'b.h;a'w> as: %r"b.x;l. Hymex]r>tiw>.235

Once it is accepted that Luke’s use of both dγαπάω and oiktìρω in 6.27-36 ultimately goes back to Aramaic ~xer> it becomes clear that the teaching of Jesus in this passage is commentary on the fifth beatitude.

In fact, it is possible that Luke has given a hint that he is aware of this beatitude in Luke 6.32a. The Greek text reads: καὶ εἶ δὲ ἀγαπᾶτε τοὺς ἀγαπώντας ὑμᾶς, ποία ὑμῖν χάρις ἐστίν.236 The Christian Palestinian version (ms B), translates ποία ὑμῖν χάρις ἐστίν by nwKL yBw+ )M 237 (Lewis & Gibson [1899] 1971:101).238

235 Thus, Onkelos and Pseudo-Jonathan; Targum Neofiti: lwkrbxl lwmxrtw.

236 If you love those who love you, what credit is that to you?

237 lwkl ybwj am

The word \( y\text{b}w+ \) corresponds to the Aramaic word \( ybeWj \) (from the word \( ab'Wj \), used in each of the Aramaic reconstructions with the 3rd person, plural pronominal suffix, thus: \( !\text{AhbeWj} \)). This word obviously can be used to mean *blessed* but it is also flexible enough to mean *grace*. For instance, \( ab'Wj \) is used to translate \( ds,x \), in Psalm 33.22.\(^{239}\) The Christian Palestinian version seems to have recognized, by the use of \( ab'Wj \), that this verse may contain a play on words based on the fifth beatitude. Consider how natural Luke 6.32a sounds in Aramaic next to the reconstructed beatitude:

Matthew 5.7: \( !\text{ymix]\r:t.mi} \!\WNhiD> \!\ynIm'x]\r:D> \!\text{AhybeWj} \)

*Blessed are the merciful for they shall receive mercy.*

Luke 6.32a: \( !\text{Akl. ybeWj am'} \!\text{Akyle[}; \!\text{ymix}\r:D> \!\text{Whyle[;} \!\text{ymix}\r:} \!\aiw> \\

*And if you give mercy upon those that give mercy to you what credit is that to you.*

The former promises a blessing to those who are *merciful*; the latter says that there is no such blessing to those who merely fulfill this beatitude by loving those who love them back. It is easy to see that Luke 6.32a becomes much more powerful if understood as predicated on the fifth beatitude.

**II.7.3.2.3  The Language of Matthew’s Source: Hebrew**

\(^{239}\) The LXX translates \( ds,x \), in this verse with \( \tilde{\ell}\lambda\epsilon\omicron\zeta \).
The parallel to Luke 6.32a in Matthew 5.46 has, instead of ποία ἥμιν χάρις ἐστίν, the words: τίνα μισθὸν ἔχετε.240 This may be another indication that the source of OMatthew was a Hebrew translation from an Aramaic collection of the words of Jesus. A Hebrew speaker faced with translating the word ab'Wj would naturally have translated it as hb'Aj. Aside from meaning good or goodness (Jastrow [1903] 1992:521), hb'Aj can also mean the benefit from good deeds. This meaning is sometimes synonymous with divine blessing or reward.

This is true even in biblical Hebrew. For example, in 1 Samuel 24.20 Saul pronounces a blessing upon David, saying: yli ht'yfi[ rv,a] hZ<h; ~AYh; tx;T; hb'Aj ^m.L,v;y> hwhyw.241 The later biblical use of hb'Aj as a reward can be seen in Nehemiah 5.19: hZ<h; ~'[h'-l[; ytiyfi[-rv,a] lKo hb'Ajl. yh;Olal/ yLi-hr"k.z".242 Nehemiah closes his book with a shortened form of this same petition for divine reward in 13.31, saying: hb'Ajl. yh;Olal/ yLi-hr"k.z".

Kiddushin 40b quotes Ecclesiastes 9.18b: hBer>h; hb'Aj dBea;y> dx'a, aj,Axw>.243 The context of this quotation is a passage contrasting divine judgement between the righteous and the unrighteous and thus, losing much good was taken to mean losing divine good or reward (which in this context includes eternal life) for good deeds done. It goes on to say: hbrh twbwj wnmm dbwa ajxX ydyxy ajx.244 Thus, there is a good possibility that Matthew’s use of μισθὸν goes back to the Hebrew word hb'Aj which itself was a translation of ab'Wj.245

240 What reward do you have?
241 So may the LORD reward you with good for what you have done to me this day (RSV).
242 Remember to me for good, O my God, all that I have done for this people.
243 But one sinner destroys much good (NIV).
244 A single sinner that sins loses for himself many good (rewards).
245 Cognizance is taken of the fact that a much more common word for reward (and divine reward in particular) would have been rk'T (Jastrow [1903] 1992:1576). For example, in Avoth 2.19 Rabbi Eleazar is
II.7.3.2.4 Reconstructing the Hebrew version of the Apodosis

Unlike the Aramaic, *ṭhpe’al* and *ṭhpa’el* forms (which can have either an active or passive meaning), the Hebrew *ḥithpa’el* form, ~\(\text{xer:ti} \text{hi}\) (not found in Biblical Hebrew), seems to have had neither a passive nor reflexive meaning but only the active meaning: to pity (Jastrow [1903] 1992:1467). This basically rules out the use of this *binyan* in forming a Hebrew reconstruction of the apodosis of this beatitude.

Biblical Hebrew employed the *pu’al* to express the passive meaning *receive mercy* [e.g., ~\(\text{x;ruy}\)* in Hosea 14.4 (translated in Targum Jonathan by ~\(\text{xertai}\); by ἐλεήσει in the LXX)]. Jastrow gives no examples of any *pu’al* form of ~\(\text{x;ri}\)* in Mishnaic Hebrew ([1903] 1992:1467). However, a *pu’al* plural participle is contained in a Jewish prayer associated with the *Musaf* service for *Rosh ha-Shanah*:

\[
\text{wn[dyX} \text{hmk} \text{~ymxwrm} \text{hmh} \text{$ymxwrmw} \text{~ynwnx} \text{hmh}
\text{wnyhwla yy} \text{$ynwnx} \text{yk} \text{~xwry} \text{~xrt rXa} \text{taw} \text{!xwy} \text{!wxt rXa}
\text{ta wnyhwla} \text{(Ben Yehuda 1951 13:6537)}^{246}
\]

*For those who have received compassion from you, O’ LORD, our God, they receive compassion and those who have been given mercy from you receive mercy as you made known to us, O’ our God, he that you will have compassion on will receive compassion and whom you will have mercy on will receive mercy.*

---

246 Ben Yehuda quotes from *hnwmaw tma*; Not in Singer’s section on the *Musaf* service for *Rosh ha-Shanah* (1962:335-345).
The words, "~xwry ~xrt rXa taw !xwy !wxt rXa ta", are an allusion to Exodus 33.19. This prayer seems not only to be tied to this verse but also patterned on the Palestinian interpretation of it (see §II.7.3.2.1.5). The fact that "~ymix]Wrm." is not used in conjunction with the preposition I; may be considered significant. Perhaps the passive use of "~xr" was so rare that, whether in Hebrew or Aramaic, use of it (particularly as a divine passive without I;) was considered an allusion to Exodus 33.19.

II.7.3.3 Aramaic and Hebrew Reconstructions

Aramaic

"~ymix]r:t.mi !WNhiD> !ynIm'x]r:D> !AhybeWj"

Hebrew

"~ymix]Wrm. ~h,v, !ymix]r:m.h; yrEv.a;"

II.7.4 What this Beatitude Means

The passage in Luke’s Sermon on the Plain (6.27-42), in which Jesus commands his followers to love their enemies and not to judge others, more than likely represents Jesus’ own commentary on how he wanted this beatitude to be primarily understood. Because the word "~x;r>" encompasses the broad meanings of both mercy and love this beatitude was able to be illustrated in numerous ways. Luke has not quoted this beatitude but neither has he mentioned that the command to love one’s enemies came from Jesus expanding the command in Leviticus 19.18 to love one’s neighbour. James 2.8-13 confirms that Matthew is correct in prefixing this quotation before the command to love your enemies.

II.7.4.1 Matthew 5.11-48: Commentary on the Beatitudes

II.7.4.1.1 Assigning Passages as Commentary on Specific Beatitudes

247 MT: "~xer:a] rv,a]-ta, yTim.x;rIw> !xoa' rv,a]-ta, ytiNOx;w>"
Before going further it is important to establish how Matthew 5.11-48 relates to the Beatitudes as a whole. Goulder suggests that having given the Beatitudes, Jesus expounds on them in reverse order (1974:250-252). Thus, the outline is:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Beatitude</th>
<th>Exposition</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>8. The Persecuted</td>
<td>5.11-20</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7. The Peacemakers</td>
<td>5.21-26</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6. The Pure in Heart</td>
<td>5.27-32</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5. The Merciful</td>
<td>5.33-48</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

This theory makes a lot of sense and it may be accepted that the original Aramaic Sermon on the Mount was arranged somewhat like this. However, OMatthew has taken the contents of verses eleven and twelve as two extra beatitudes (bringing the total to ten) which serves his purpose for portraying Jesus as the New Moses (Betz 1995:109). Betz credits the modern theory of ten original beatitudes to Delitzsch, and goes on to say: “Most scholars have rejected this idea as fanciful, but one must still explain why there are ten beatitudes” (1995:109). The problem is solved if one sees that the original Sermon has been manipulated by OMatthew to produce ten beatitudes. Whether this is his own doing or reflects the Hebrew Sermon on the Mount is difficult to say. At any rate there seems to have been a different outline among those in the Hebrew speaking Church.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Beatitude</th>
<th>Exposition</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>5. The Merciful</td>
<td>5.13-26</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6. The Pure in Heart</td>
<td>5.27-37</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7 &amp; 8. The Peacemakers and the Persecuted</td>
<td>5.38-48</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Because this is a much more awkward outline OMatthew has smoothed some of the rougher edges. For example, to accommodate the teaching on loving one’s enemies to the eighth beatitude, the word διακόνοντων (representing ~ypid>Ar) has been injected into 5.44. The seventh beatitude is brought in by the mention of words connected with ~Alv'. Thus, 5.47 (not paralleled in Luke 6.27-36) applies the command to love to

---

248 In this he is following A M Farrer, whom he cites. Evidently Goulder studied under Farrer or was in some way mentored by him as he dedicates his book to him.
greeting others (∼Alv'B. laeAv). The admonition to be merciful as your Father is merciful (Lk 6.36) is now changed, in 5.48, to: Be perfect as your heavenly Father is perfect (NIV). Here, τέλειος represents the passive participle ∼l'v.Wm, which means perfect (Jastrow [1903] 1992:1585).

The way the narrower, Hebrew understanding of ∼ymixjr: (i.e., as mercy in a stricter sense) was understood shows itself in how the words of Jesus in the Sermon on the Mount are applied by OMatthew to this beatitude.

II.7.4.1.2 Midrash on the Sixth Commandment

The opposite of mercy is judgement. The Rabbis took Exodus 34.6-7 (the passage in which God proclaims himself as he passes in front of Moses) and from it they formulated 13 divine attributes, or middoth (Ned 32a). The two most notable, and at the same time diametrically opposed, are the ∼ymixjr:h' tD"mi249 and the !yDLh; tD"mi250 (Jastrow [1903] 1992:732). One did not talk of divine mercy without also thinking of divine judgement, or vice-versa. Therefore, it was natural for Matthew to apply Jesus’ comments on that which engenders judgement to this beatitude. The midrash on the sixth commandment in Matthew 5.21-26 (Thou shalt not murder) is used by Matthew as a commentary on the beatitude for the merciful.

II.7.4.1.2.a Mercy Applied to Matthew 5.21-22

Though several sins are condemned in Matthew 5.21-48 the only place where judgement is mentioned is in this section on the sixth commandment. There is a three-fold progression of penalties in this passage: judgement (5.21, 22), the Sanhedrin (5.22) and gehenna of fire (5.22). This passage has a beautiful poetic balance. Two vastly different offenses (in human terms) are equated: both murder and anger will result in judgement. Next, two equal offenses have vastly different penalties.

---

249 attribute of mercy
250 attribute of judgement
This is not to suggest that Jesus is saying that calling someone 'Raka is less of an offense than calling someone a fool. The passage may be paraphrased this way:

_We all know that anyone who is guilty of murder will be judged by God. But, being guilty of anger is actually just as bad. We all know that calling someone a good-for-nothing can get you called up before the religious authorities but the truth is far more serious; disrespecting others will send you to hell._

Perhaps one of the reasons _Matthew_ felt justified in applying this section to the beatitude for the _merciful_ was because of the popular understanding that the antidote to anger is _mercy_ (Ber 7a). God’s holy anger is tempered by his _mercy_ (Hab 3.2). Perhaps the link between _mercy_ and how it affects God’s anger was just the natural development of the attributes he proclaimed to Moses in Exodus 34.6 juxtaposing being !WNx;w> ~Wxr: with being ~yIP; a; %r<a. The point then of Matthew 5.21-22, in the context of this beatitude is that those who would be like God must be _merciful_ rather than angry.

---

251 The use of _Raka_ in Matthew 5.22 must not be seen as proof that the source for the Sermon on the Mount comes from an Aramaic source rather than a Hebrew one. The term corresponds to aq'yre (meaning _good for nothing_), and was commonly used by both Hebrew and Aramaic speakers alike (Strack & Billerbeck 1925:278; Jastrow [1903] 1992:1476). It was also employed by Greek speakers in Palestine, for a papyrus from Lachish (dated 257 BC) castigates a certain Antiochus (Epiphanes?), calling him: 'Antíc'c' f'ν rά'χ'ν (Goulder 1974:257).

252 _merciful and gracious_

253 _slow to anger_
That James is familiar with this ‘Hebrew outline’ can be seen by his comments in chapter two of that book. James 2.1-7 addresses the treatment of the poor (verse five of which alludes to the first beatitude). James’ comments in 2.8-13 are undoubtedly inspired by the Sermon on the Mount (as he knew it), and the Beatitudes in particular. James calls the command to love your neighbour as yourself a νόμον βασιλικόν\(^{254}\) (2.8). The fact that Leviticus 19.18 is connected to the Beatitudes, which concern living in the Kingdom of God, must have been enough to prompt this appellation. But it is important to note that OMatthew has applied this commandment to the eighth (and the seventh) beatitude, which mentions that αὐτῶν ἐστιν ἡ βασιλεία τῶν οὐρανῶν.\(^{255}\)

James’ appeal to the sixth and seventh Commandments make little sense in the context except that they go back to the Sermon on the Mount (cf, Mt 5.21-30). His specific charge that dishonouring the poor amounts to murder conforms precisely with the application made of the sixth commandment to the beatitude of the merciful.\(^{256}\) He crowns this passage with a negative version of the fifth beatitude: κρίσις ἀνέλεος τῷ μὴ ποιήσαντι ἥλεος.\(^{257}\) This fits so well with the understanding of the sixth commandment in Matthew 5.21-26 that it must mean James is familiar with this application.

### II.7.4.1.2.b Mercy Applied to Matthew 5.23-24.

\(^{254}\) royal law

\(^{255}\) theirs is the kingdom of heaven

\(^{256}\) There are also rabbinic statements that equate the dishonouring of individuals with killing them (e.g., B Mets 112a).

\(^{257}\) Judgement without mercy will be shown to anyone who has not been merciful (NIV).
The comments concerning being reconciled with one’s brother in Matthew 5.23-24 must (as Goulder suggests\(^{258}\)) have originally been applied to the seventh beatitude. Not only because brotherly reconciliation is part of what peacemakers do but also because of the mention that this is more important than one’s gift brought to the altar. This hints at a play on words, for the gift, in this context, is a peace-offering, called in Hebrew: \(\sim\text{ymil}’\nu\).\(^{259}\)

The original application would have been that human reconciliation takes precedence over religious fervor, and, even more importantly, that peace with God is dependent on first being reconciled with others. By applying these words to the fifth beatitude the meaning is almost unaffected and becomes a warning that one will not receive mercy from God if personal conflicts have been left unresolved.

In the Didache, chapters 14 and 15 are predicated on Matthew 5.21-24. Fascinatingly, it seems that the author is aware that this is commentary on the seventh beatitude. Didache 14 concerns Sunday worship and holding the Eucharist in particular. The second verse reads: *but let none who has a quarrel with his fellow join in your meeting until they be reconciled, that your sacrifice be not defiled* (Lake 1970:331). This is the logical application of Matthew 5.23-24.\(^{260}\) In 15.3 the author admonishes that they should not reprove others in \(\partial\nu\gamma\nu\) [anger] (alluding to Mt 5.22), but in \(\epsilon\nu\rho\eta\nu\) [peace]. He concludes this verse with the words: \(\omicron\zeta\varepsilon\chi\varepsilon\tau\varepsilon\varepsilon\nu\tau\omicron\delta\nu\varepsilon\omicron\gamma\varepsilon\lambda\lambda\omega\) [as you have (it) in the Gospel]. The author is not giving an allusion to the seventh beatitude but to Matthew 5.21-26 explained in light of that beatitude.\(^{261}\)

**II.7.4.1.2.c Mercy Applied to Matthew 5.25-26**

---

\(^{258}\) Goulder 1974:256

\(^{259}\) The word *gift* in this context goes back to the word \(\text{!B'r>q}'\) (Arndt & Gingrich 1957:210). This is a generic word used both for free-will offerings and obligatory ones. Flusser has suggested that Jesus is speaking of the *sin offering*.

\(^{260}\) In this context it is difficult to see whether the sacrifice in Matthew 5.23 is understood as a *sin offering* or a *peace offering*. Christ was portrayed in the early church as both (e.g., Heb 9.28; Eph 2.14).

\(^{261}\) *Mercy* is also present. The next verse, 15.4, says: *But your prayers and alms \(\text{!e}logen\nu\nu\nu\nu\nu\) and all your acts perform as ye find in the Gospel of our Lord* (Lake 1970:331). This appears to allude to Matthew 6.1-8.
Clement of Rome (mis)quotes this beatitude in a proactive sense as: ἐλεάτε, ἵνα ἐλεηθῆτε (1Clem 13.2). The same reading is given by Polycarp (Phil 2.3), and Clement of Alexandria (Strom II, 92, 2). All of these have a connection with the Jewish-Christian Church. It appears that they understood that by being merciful to people God would ensure that one would receive mercy from others (cf, Clement’s ὡς ποιεῖτε, οὗτοι ποιηθήσεται ὑμῖν in 1 Cl 13.2). Perhaps this stems from a tradition associating Jesus’ comments on reconciling with one’s adversary (Mt 5.25-26) as commentary on the fifth beatitude. Perhaps it was the use of ἔχει τι κατὰ σοῦ in the previous illustration which prompted bringing in an example involving litigation. The Christian Palestinian version (codex A) correctly renders these words as: mwLK kYL (Lewis & Gibson [1899] 1971:63). This becomes, in Hebrew, judicial terminology for having a claim against someone. Thus Sanhedrin 105a speaks of one having a claim against another using the idiom: ~wlk hz l[ hzl Xy ~wlk (Jastrow [1903] 1992:640).

262 Be merciful that you may receive mercy.

263 ~wlk $yl[
Jeremias suggests that this passage has been added from another context (1972:96). He is likely correct to see that this saying was originally framed as a parable warning of imminent crisis (Jeremias 1972:42). This passage may have been originally given as a metaphor for asking mercy from God before the final judgement. The parallel in Luke 12.57-59 certainly can be understood that way. As it stands, the admonition to be reconciled with an adversary is to be understood as advice that will allow an individual to receive mercy rather than judgement. The words about being thrown into prison until you have paid the last penny (NIV) seem to indicate that a debt is involved. Rather than understand the words ἵσθι εἰνοκῶν to be a command, it makes better sense to see them as representing a Hebrew compound tense used to express a usual practice (cf, the common Mishnaic rmeAa hy"h = he used to say). A Hebrew speaker would recognize that IDET;v.mi T"yyIh, means you would be making friends (with your adversary). Thus, this passage was included, not to give advice for reconciliation with adversaries but to be an illustration to teach that mercy is not automatic at the judgement. One must acknowledge his debt to God and the seriousness of his need for divine mercy.

The examples given in Matthew 5.21-26 illustrate the main two ways mercy was used (in a human context) in Hebrew: judicial leniency (yKeth 9.2) and debt remission. These are each then to be regarded as metaphorical for how God gives mercy and how, even apart from Matthew 5.21-26, this beatitude would have been understood and applied.

II.7.4.2 Mercy = Forgiveness of Sins

There are especially two categories of individuals associated with dispensing mercy. The first are those who sit in judgement. Whether judges, kings, or anyone else that was in a position to be able to judge, the hope of those coming before them was to receive mercy.

---

264 The use of the formula ἀμὴν λέγω σοι in verse 26 marks the end of a parable elsewhere. Cf, Mt 21.31 (Jeremias 1972:80).
265 ἵσθι is an imperfect of εἰμί, and εἰνοκῶν is a participle. This looks suspiciously like it represents the Hebrew compound tense (perfect of hy"h' + participle).
266 The use of the verb IDET;v.hil. helps reconcile the difference between Luke and Matthew’s versions of this parable. Where Matthew has ἵσθι εἰνοκῶν, Luke 12.58 has δος ἐργασίαν ἀπηλλάξθητι ἀπ' αύτού [give effort to be free from him]. The idiom δος ἐργασίαν has rightly been recognized as a Latinism (Arndt
The use of the imagery of a king or a judge for God was common in Judaism (Ps 58.11; 1Sa 12.12) and frequently used by Jesus (e g, Lk 18.1-6; Mt 18.23-34).

Receiving mercy, as expressed in the apodosis of this beatitude, would first of all be understood as a reference to receiving forgiveness of sins. This understanding was well established in Old Testament times. For instance, Isaiah 55.7 uses mercy and forgiveness in parallelism:

\[
\text{WnyheOla}/--\text{l}a,w. \text{Whmex}]r;\text{ywi } \text{hwhy}--\text{l}a, \text{bOvy}'\text{w. wyt'Ov}x.m; !\text{w,a' vyaiw. AKr.D; } [\nu'\nu' \text{bzo}]y; \text{x;Als.li hB,r.y}--;yKi
\]

*Let the wicked forsake his way and the evil man his thoughts. Let him turn to the LORD, and he will have mercy on him, and to our God, for he will freely pardon* (NIV).

This in turn, by inter-testamental times, was equated with salvation. This is readily demonstrated in Sirach 2.11, which says:

\[
\text{dio,ti oivkti}r\text{mwn kai. evleh,}\text{mwn o' }\text{ku,rioj kai. avfi,hsin a'marti,aj kai. sw,|zei evn kairw| qli,yewj.}
\]

*For the Lord is compassionate and merciful, he forgives sins, and saves in the time of trouble.*

II.7.4.3  Mercy = Forgiving Debts

& Gingrich 1957:193) and means *strive.* |DET;\text{v.hil.} can mean both *strive and be on good terms with* (Jastrow [1903] 1992:1525).

\[
\text{κα} \text{καρ\text{f}ο\text{i}θλιψεως.}^{267}
\]

*Cf, One of the roles of the Messiah mentioned in 4Q436 was: hmtrc t[b ~yld ~xnl [to comfort the poor in their time of trouble].*
This beatitude shares what is probably a deliberate resemblance to the fifth petition of the Lord’s Prayer which says: καὶ ἄφες ἡμῖν τὰ ὀφειλήματα ἡμῶν, ὡς καὶ ἡμεῖς ἀφίεμεν τοῖς ὀφειλέταις ἡμῶν.268 That petition contains a well known play on words stemming from the fact that the Aramaic word for sin (abwx) also means debt.269

An instance of the Greek verb ἔλεηω with this meaning can be seen in a letter (BGU IV. 1079) written to a man who is unable to pay a debt (dated 41 AD). The writer advises the man to ask his creditor daily out of the chance that he might have pity on you [σε ἔλεησαι] (Moulton & Milligan 1930:202). It is instructive that the verb continues with this meaning in Modern Greek (Moulton & Milligan 1930:203).

The concept of sin as a debt was established even before New Testament times. This was true, not only for Aramaic speakers, but for Hebrew and Greek speaking Jews as well. A Hebrew example from the Dead Sea Scrolls can be found in 11Q13 (col 2, line 6) where Melchizedek appears to release them from the debt of all their sins. A good example in Greek can be found in the Apocrypha. Wisdom 1.4 reads, No, Wisdom will never make its way into a crafty soul nor stay in a body that is in debt to sin (JB).

Like the fifth petition of the Lord’s Prayer this beatitude suggests that having mercy on others is a prerequisite for receiving the same from God. This would not have been regarded as revolutionary, it was also already a widespread theological concept by the time of Jesus. This can be illustrated from the book of Sirach (28.2): Forgive your neighbor’s injustice; then, when you pray, your own sins will be forgiven.270

268 forgive our debts as we forgive our debtors.

269 Jesus regularly employed the word ab’Ax in his preaching and enjoyed utilizing its several meanings to illustrate God’s forgiveness of sin through parables and examples of monetary debts being cancelled (e.g., Mt 18.23-35). Jesus’ penchant or this metaphor was not unique. The first-century Rabbi, Yosi the Priest, told a parable (R Hash 17b) in which the pardon of a loan of money to one’s fellow is compared to forgiveness of sins.

270 Various passages from Jewish literature quoting Rabbis who lived within a generation or two of Christ also echo the reciprocity expressed in this beatitude, showing that such an idea was widespread. In Yoma 8.9 Rabbi Eleazer ben Azariah declared that the Day of Atonement does not atone for trespasses between a man and his fellow unless he pardons his fellow. Other such references include Shabbat 151b, and Pesiqta Rabbati 38, 164b. A later Rabbi named Raba (R Hash 17b), in reference to Micah 7.18, asks: [vp I' rbw[v yml !w[ afwn yml [Whose iniquity is forgiven? That of him who pardons (another’s) sin.].
II.7.4.3.1 The law of canceling debts

The backdrop to the petition for forgiveness in the Lord’s Prayer as well as the beatitude for the merciful is the law for the year of Jubilee (Lv 25). The year of Jubilee, which encompasses the law of canceling debts, goes far beyond that and speaks of greater restoration. This law was given an eschatological sense even before Second Temple times. The fact that the Beatitudes are formed with Isaiah 61 in mind suggests that Jesus, as part of his gospel of the kingdom, was proclaiming an inaugurated, eschatological year of Jubilee. Jesus makes this very thing clear in his sermon at Nazareth where after reading Isaiah 61.1-2a, which speaks of the year of Jubilee, he declares that the prophecy is fulfilled. In the same way, in this beatitude the fulfillment of Isaiah 49.10, 13, specifically, is being proclaimed. Just as, in the Jubilee, the debtor’s debts are forgiven, even so that man must also forgive his debtors. The merciful one has come, and he is bestowing mercy. Those who have received mercy are obligated to give mercy.

II.7.4.3.1.2 The Contribution of 11Q13

11Q13 provides evidence that the inauguration of the eschatological year of Jubilee would have been an integral part of Jesus’ greater message concerning the Kingdom of God. Though it has been shown that the concept of sin as a debt was current in Second Temple times the understanding of forgiving others simultaneously with receiving the forgiveness of God is the product of the Jubilee having been proclaimed. This goes beyond the Jewish theological thought of the time, whose prayers for forgiveness of sin were focused on the world to come. It proclaims access to the privileges of the coming age in this lifetime as well as the ability and authority to pass these gifts on to others (Jeremias 1971:201).

Frequent allusion to Isaiah 61.1-2 occurs in messianic and eschatological contexts among the Dead Sea Scrolls (e.g., 4Q521, frag 2, col 2). In 11Q13, amidst an allusion to this passage in Isaiah, the heavenly figure of Melchizedek appears to establish a righteous kingdom (col 2, line 9). His appearance coincides with the year of Jubilee. In column 2, lines 2-6, Wise translates as follows:
And concerning what Scripture says, “In [this] year of jubilee [you shall return, every one of you, to your property” (Lv 25.13) and what is also written, “And this is the [ma]nner of [the remission]: every creditor shall remit the claim that is held [against a neighbor, not exacting it of a neighbor who is a member of the community, because God’s] remission [has been proclaimed” (Deuteronomy 15.2):] [the interpretation] is that it applies [to the L]ast Days and concerns the captives, just as [Isaiah said: “To proclaim the jubilee to the captives” (Isa. 61.1). . . just] as [. . .] and from the inheritance of Melchizedek, f[or . . .Melchize]dek, who will return them to what is rightfully theirs. He will proclaim to them the jubilee, thereby releasing th[em from the debt of a]ll their sins (Wise et al 1996: 456).

If this reconstruction is correct, then, in this passage, sins are referred to as debts which will be released automatically (for members of the community) at the proclamation of Jubilee by Melchizedek. This suggests that forgiveness of sins belongs to the time of Salvation. The obvious parallel to Jesus (himself referred to as Melchizedek in Heb 7-8) and his use of Isaiah 61.1-2 in the synagogue at Nazareth (Lk 4.18-21) makes this scroll extremely valuable for determining the understanding of Matthew 6.12.

With these things in mind one can readily see that this petition is another example of Jesus declaring that the kingdom of God had come and that the power and privileges of the age to come were breaking into this world. When taken in the light of the year of Jubilee, the context of God forgiving believers their debts while they, simultaneously, are forgiving others becomes clear.

This background also helps explain a problem in Luke’s version of the Lord’s Prayer. Luke 11.4 calls on God to forgive our sins [τὰς ἁμαρτίας ἡμῶν] as we forgive our debtors [πάντι ὁφείλοντι ἡμῖν]. This seems to be a confusion of Greek translations of ab’Ax (sin/debt). By mixing ἁμαρτίας [sins] with ὁφείλοντι [debtors] Luke is expressing the holistic understanding of concrete and abstract debts being released; so, there is then no dichotomy between sins and debts (whether literal or figurative). This is mirrored by the way the fifth beatitude was understood by Matthew. Mercy is necessary for sins to be forgiven as well as for debts owed to adversaries to be forgiven.
II.7.4.4 Mercy = Almsgiving

Something generally not discussed by those commenting on this beatitude is the use of the words to have mercy or to be merciful with reference to almsgiving. Yet, in Greek this was often employed to refer to giving to the poor. The noun mercy [ἐλεημοσύνη] is used for almsgiving elsewhere in the Sermon on the Mount (Mt 6.2,3,4). It is here that a difference exists between the Semitic use of mercy and the Greek.

Though ~xeyrl (Hebrew) and ~xer: (Aramaic) are often used with the idea of giving money to people, almsgiving is usually referred to in Jewish writings by the word righteousness\(^{271}\) (cf, 2Co 9.9-10).\(^{272}\) Thus, when Sirach 3.30 says: πῦρ φλογιζόμενον ἀποσβέσει ὕδωρ, καὶ ἐλεημοσύνη ἐξιλάσεται ἀμαρτίας,\(^{273}\) it comes as no surprise that ἐλεημοσύνη in this verse translates the Hebrew word hqdc.\(^{274}\)

II.7.4.5 How is This Beatitude to be Understood?

Davies and Allison (1988:466) have said, “The beatitudes are first of all blessings, not requirements.” This statement is only partly true, even with regard to the first four beatitudes. The beatitudes of the poor, mourners and meek are ostensibly blessings for those in difficult circumstances. The ‘hidden’ meaning is a call to humble oneself and become as such in order to receive these blessings. A noticeable shift which occurs with this beatitude. It is the first of the second group of four beatitudes. This latter group (particularly beatitudes 5-7) is characterized by the fact that they are demands for a standard of discipleship. Though framed as blessings they are indeed requirements for a life pleasing to God. No longer is this application hidden. It is blatant.

\(^{271}\) Heb hq'd'c.; Aram at'q.d>ci

\(^{272}\) Paul's use of OT passages speaking of righteousness as a basis for teaching on giving is probably a product of his rabbinical training. For instance, this same technique can be seen in the way B Bath 10b uses Proverbs 14.34: Righteousness exalts a nation but sin is a reproach to any people (NIV). This was interpreted to mean: Benevolence is a sin offering for Israel as well as the gentiles (Jastrow [1903] 1992:447).

\(^{273}\) Water quenches a blazing fire, almsgiving atones for sins.

\(^{274}\) The full verse reads: atjx rpkt hqdc !k ~ym wbky tjhwl va.
Those, such as Herrmann, Bultmann and Dibelius who understood the Beatitudes (as well as the Sermon on the Mount as a whole) as promoting an impossible ideal (Trites 1992:193) could not have been more mistaken as to the intention of Jesus. Goulder’s insight, that Matthew 5.11-48 is practical commentary on the meaning of each of the last four beatitudes, giving examples of how to apply them in real situations, is a true breakthrough (see §II.7.4.1.1).

This beatitude is difficult not to understand, at least on the surface. The expositions on this beatitude offered by Jesus, *OMatthew* and James require a greater level of personal application. Applying this beatitude to forgiveness seems obvious. Trites (1992:188) is typical, suggesting that the best “commentary on the meaning of this passage is provided later in Matthew’s Gospel in the Parable of the Unmerciful Servant (Mt 18.21-35).”

If anything, the real contribution of this chapter for understanding this beatitude comes from seeing that its interpretation must be broad enough to take in the fact that Aramaic *~x;r>* is used for both *mercy* and *love*. To truly understand what this beatitude means requires the teaching Jesus gives on *love* to be applied to it. Thus, for Jesus, *mercy* includes loving one’s enemies. It also requires that one understand the antithesis of *mercy* which is *judgement*. Forms of judgement include anger and insults. Therefore, for James, *mercy* includes regard for the human dignity of the poor.

Obviously the teachings this chapter has proposed were applied to this beatitude are available to give guidance in life even not being considered as commentary on what it means to be *merciful*. The difference that this makes is that it allows the Beatitudes to be foundational statements Jesus and the early church built their theology on rather than mere proverbs, just as easily ignored as put into practice.
Chapter Eight

Blessed are the pure in heart for they shall see God.

Matthew 5.8: μακάριοι οἱ καθαροὶ τῇ καρδίᾳ, ὦτι αὐτοὶ τὸν θεὸν ὁψονται.

II.8.1 Finding an Allusion to Isaiah 61: Pure in Heart = Broken-hearted

Something interesting which has come from the research done for this thesis is that the only ones suggesting that an allusion exists between this beatitude and Isaiah 61 are those who have tried to reconstruct it into either Hebrew or Aramaic. This is surprising since so many commentators consider that there is an “obvious” connection with the first and second beatitudes (Plackal 1988:30). One would think that the term pure in heart in a passage already having allusions to Isaiah 61 would immediately suggest some sort of link with Isaiah’s mention of the broken-hearted. The fact that all the other beatitudes preceding this one can be linked (even if indirectly) to Isaiah 61 gives greater impetus to look there for background.

II.8.1.1 Lachs’ Theory: Hebrew Haplography

Lachs, who advocates a Hebrew original, suggests that μακάριοι οἱ καθαροὶ τῇ καρδίᾳ is a Greek translation of ble yrEB' yrEv.a; (Schwarz 1985:303). He proposes, however, that the original beatitude was a direct allusion to Isaiah 61.1: ble-yrEB.v.Nlh; yrEv.a;275 (Schwarz 1985:303). He theorizes that at some point, through haplography, ble-yrEB.v.nl was changed to ble-yrEB' (Schwarz 1985:303). Lachs goes so far as to say that this is proof of a Hebrew original (Schwarz 1985:303).

275 Blessed are the broken-hearted.
II.8.1.2 Schwarz’s Theory: Aramaic Haplography

Schwarz, however, shows that this same phenomenon could have happened with an original Aramaic beatitude. He notes that the Isaiah Targum translates ble-yreB.v.nil. by aB'li yrEybit.li and, like Lachs, blames scribal error for the substitution of an original aB'li yrEybit. !AhybeWj with aB'li yrEyrIB. !AhybeWj (Schwarz 1985:304).

II.8.1.3 Black’s Theory: Aramaic Haplography

Similarly, Black suggests that καθαροὶ τῇ καρδίᾳ would be a Greek rendering of an Aramaic ble ykeD>, which in turn was theoretically derived from ble ykeykiD> – itself an Aramaic translation of ble-yrEB.v.nl in Isaiah 61.1 (1967:158).

The similarity between these Hebrew and Aramaic words for pure and broken make a compelling case for each theory. But, attributing the change of broken > pure to scribal inaccuracy seems to be solely for scholarly convenience as it alleviates the need to show how the pure in heart would be recognized as an allusion to Isaiah 61.1. It implies, of course, that Jesus never gave a beatitude for the pure in heart. This supposition is also based on the idea that there was a written document which was miscopied. Haplography, as a solution to the problem, doesn’t apply when the situation involves an oral tradition. But, in the case of the Sermon on the Mount it seems that what it is we are dealing with is oral tradition.

With all due respect to the scholars who have put forward or supported theories which depended on haplography the judgement is that they have failed to be convincing. Therefore additional criteria will be added, for this beatitude, by which any reconstruction proposed will need to meet. Aside from the three-beat rhythmic criterion, it must:

1.) show a relationship to the broken-hearted of Isaiah 61.1.

2.) be able to reasonably explain how this beatitude came to be for the pure in heart.
II.8.2 Hebrew and Aramaic Reconstruction of this Beatitude

II.8.2.1 Aramaic Reconstruction of the First Hemistich

The Old Syriac, Peshitta and Christian Palestinian versions all use οΥΚΔ to render καθέροι in this beatitude. This would correspond to the relative pronoun Δ> added to the plural Pe‘al participle !ykeD°. The unanimity between the ancient Aramaic versions suggests that Black may have been on the right track.

Burney’s reconstruction of the first hemistich was tiubahón didkáyín beliba (1925:166). Burney’s reconstruction, however, seems a bit awkward. It gives the required three beat rhythm and it has the benefit of being close to the tradition preserved in the ancient Aramaic speaking Christian community (which evidence must never be summarily discounted).

That notwithstanding, Jeremias’ more compact tiubahón didékélibba (1971:24) seems to better reflect Jewish Aramaic. An interesting thing about the form aB'li ykeD> is that it can represent either a singular or a plural form (Stevenson 1962:29). This is more or less the same reading proposed by Black (see §II.8.1.3). The term for pure in heart suggested by Black and Jeremias, aB'li ykeD>, occurs in the Targum to Proverbs 22.11.

An alternate version of the same term, akd bbl, occurs in an Aramaic Scroll (4Q542 1.10) from Qumran. The inversion of terms and idioms was a common literary technique among ancient Jews. For example, in Qumran the terms xwr ywn (1QM 14.7) and xwr hwn (1QS 4.3) seem to be synonymous.

276 !ykdd
277 aB'liIIC. !ylK:d>DI !AhybeWj
278 aB'li yked>DI !AhybeWj
Even in biblical times, this technique was used for poetic reasons. For example, consider how both \textit{x;Wr-lp;v.W}^{279} and \textit{~ylip'v. x;Wr}^{280} are used in Isaiah 57.15. Cook recognizes \textit{akd bbl} as synonymous with \textit{aB'li ykeD>} and translates it as \textit{pure in heart} (Wise et al 1996:433). A couple of lines earlier (1.8) in this scroll we find the plural form, \textit{!yk}, in the admonition: \textit{!ykd !yvydq awhw}.^{281} In fact, a good Hebrew example of the same parallel use of \textit{akd bbl} and \textit{!yk} in 4Q542 1.9-10 also occurs in Isaiah 57.15, where \textit{aK'D:} and \textit{~yaiK'd>nl ble} are used in synonymous parallelism (see §II.8.2.1.1.2).

\textbf{II.8.2.1.1 Broken-hearted > Crushed in Heart}

What is the proof that the term \textit{pure of heart} was a deliberate alteration of the \textit{broken-hearted} of Isaiah 61.1? The answer starts with the language of the Isaiah Targum. Where the Hebrew text says that one of the roles of God’s anointed is \textit{to heal the broken-hearted},\textsuperscript{282} the Targum says, \textit{to strengthen the broken-hearted}.

\textbf{II.8.2.1.1.1 4Q436 1.1: A Paraphrase of Isaiah 61.1-2}

The concept of God strengthening someone’s heart is also found in 4Q436. In fragment 1, line 1 are words which reflect a loose Hebrew paraphrase of Isaiah 61.1-2.

\begin{center}
\textit{~ylpwn ydyw hmtcr t[b ~yld ~xnl hb xwrl xcnlw hkdnl bl qzxl hnyb

... understanding; to strengthen the crushed heart and to overcome the spirit in it; to comfort (the) poor in the time of their trouble and the fallen hands. ...}
\end{center}

This line can be directly compared to Isaiah 61.1-2 at three points:

\begin{center}
\textbf{4Q436} \hspace{2cm} \textbf{Isaiah 61.1}
\end{center}

\textsuperscript{279} \textit{lowly of spirit}
\textsuperscript{280} \textit{spirit of the lowly}
\textsuperscript{281} \textit{be holy and pure}
\textsuperscript{282} \textit{ble-yreB.v.nil. vbx[li;}
\textsuperscript{283} \textit{aB'li yreybit.li ap'q't;li.
Thus we see in the first comparison that *to strengthen the crushed heart* paraphrases *to heal the broken heart*. A correlation (if one were needed) between *broken* and *crushed* is provided by Psalms 34.19 (18): *The LORD is close to the broken-hearted* [$\text{bl-E-yrEB.v.nil.}$] *and saves those who are crushed in spirit* [$\text{x;Wr-yaEK.D'}$] (NIV).

In the second comparison, the phrase *to comfort the poor* is used as a paraphrase of *to comfort all who mourn.*

In the third comparison *time of their trouble* paraphrases *year of favour.* A correlation between *the year of the Lord’s favour* and *the time of trouble* can be seen in the *dwd tdwcm* commentary found in the margins of the Rabbinic Bible for Isaiah 49.8. The Targum has translated $\text{!Acr'' t[eB.}$ as: $\text{ytiW[r> !ydib.' ![dTa;d> !d:y[iB.}$ an eschatological slant is given to this targumic interpretation, saying that this means: *EABE EYWE YFBSB KŠXSGB KM EQSA JQFWY EZSŠZ ŠSB.* This theme is also taken up in beatitude form in *Kethuboth 66:* $\text{~hb tjlwX !wXlw hmwa lk !ya ~wqm IX wnwcr !yXw[X !mzb larXy ~kyrXa.}$

---

284 Note that $\sim\text{yld}$ is also synonymous with $\sim\text{ywin'}$.  
285 cf, $\text{!Acr'} t[e$ in Isaiah 49.8.  
286 *time of favour* (i.e., the *Year of Jubilee*)  
287 *in the time that you are doing my will*  
288 *In the time that you will do my will I will answer you in your crying, because of the coming trouble.*
II.8.2.1.1.b 4Q436 1.1: A Paraphrase of a Conflation of Isaiah 61.1-2 and 57.15.

Let us return to the idea that 4Q436’s $hkdn\ bl\ qzxl^{290}$ is a paraphrase of Isaiah’s $ble-yrEB.v.nll.\ vbxjl^{291}$ If the author had wanted to allude to the $ble-yrEB.v.nl$ of Isaiah 61.1 wouldn’t he have used that term? If so, then, why does he use $hkdn\ bl$?

The answer is that Isaiah 61.1-2 is not the only passage in Isaiah to which allusion is being made. The author has conflated Isaiah 61.1-2 with Isaiah 57.15. The latter reads:

\begin{verbatim}
\textit{aK'D:-ta,w> !AKv.a, vAdq'w> ~Arm' Amv. vAdq'w> d[;}
!kevo aF'nIw> ~r" rm;a' hko yKi ~yaiK'd>nI ble tAyx]h;l.W
~ylip'v. x;Wr tAyx]h;l. x;Wr-lp;v.W
\end{verbatim}

\textit{For this is what the high and lofty One says - he who lives forever, whose name is holy: “I live in a high and holy place, but also with him who is contrite and lowly in spirit, to revive the spirit of the lowly and to revive the heart of the contrite” (NIV).}

That the author of 4Q436 is making allusions to both Isaiah 61.1-2 and 57.15 can be seen quite clearly in the following comparison of the three passages:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>4Q436</th>
<th>Isaiah 57.15</th>
<th>Isaiah 61.1</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1.</td>
<td>qzxl</td>
<td>vbxjl</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.</td>
<td>hkdnb</td>
<td>~yaiK'd&gt;nI ble</td>
<td>(blE-yrEB.v.nl)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.</td>
<td>xcnl</td>
<td>tAyx]h;l</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4.</td>
<td>hb\ xwr</td>
<td>~ylip'v. x;\Wr</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.</td>
<td>~yld \simn</td>
<td>~ylibea]-IK' \simen;l.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

\textsuperscript{289} Happy are you, Israel (for) in the time that you are doing the will of God there is not any people or tongue which will rule over them.

\textsuperscript{290} to strengthen the crushed heart

\textsuperscript{291} to heal the broken heart
In the first comparison the word qzxl\(^{292}\) is best considered a paraphrase of vbx]l;\(^{293}\) from Isaiah 61. As mentioned earlier, the targumist has rendered vbx]l; in the Isaiah Targum by ap'q't;I.\(^{294}\) which precisely corresponds with qZEx;l.\(^{295}\)

It is the use of hkdn bl, corresponding so well with ~yaiK'd>nI ble, in the second comparison which most establishes that Isaiah 57.15 is also in the mind of the author of 4Q436. This does not mean that any reference to the blE-yrEB.v.nl of Isaiah 61.1 has been discarded and replaced by one to the ~yaiK'd>nI ble. It means that to the writer of 4Q436, the broken-hearted of Isaiah 61.1 are equated with the crushed in heart of Isaiah 57.15. This same understanding is held by Targum Jonathan. When Isaiah 57.15 says that God is with those who are aK'd:;\(^{296}\) the Targum says that he has promised to deliver the aB'li yrEybit. This is the same translation it gives to ble-yrEB.v.nl in Isaiah 61.1.\(^{297}\) Once it is clear that the term broken-hearted was linked in apocalyptic thought to crushed in heart it helps pave the way for solving the link between broken-hearted and pure in heart.

\(^{292}\) to strengthen
\(^{293}\) to heal
\(^{294}\) to strengthen

\(^{295}\) Where Isaiah 57.15 says tAyx]h;l. [to revive], the Targum gives, not one, but three renderings: qr:p.mil. [to redeem], am'Y"q;l. [to save], and d[s.mil. [to help]. Of these, only am'Y"q;l. could possibly be construed in a way which conforms to qZEx;l., but not very well.

\(^{296}\) contrite

\(^{297}\) broken-hearted

\(^{298}\) Interestingly, the Septuagint’s version of Isaiah 57.15 changes x;Wr- lp;v. to broken-hearted [τοῖς συνετριμμένοις τὴν καρδίαν] using the same vocabulary as it does in Isaiah 61.1. The Septuagint, instead of saying contrite and lowly in spirit, says discouraged and broken-hearted.
II.8.2.1.2 Crushed in Heart > Pure in Heart

The word *crushed* (coming from the root $kd$ or $wd$) is found in a variety of other forms (e.g., $dkwdm$, $wdyn$, $kwdm$, $wdn$, $akwdm$) in Rabbinic literature. Yet, one such form, %D:, deserves special attention. Well before the first century this term became a common designation for the poor.

Thus, in the Hebrew version of Sirach 4.2 (ms A) we find: $d y[m rymxt la$.\(^{299}\)

Apparently use of this term became so prosaic that its derivation from $kd$ was all but forgotten. Thus, the *midrash* to Proverbs 22 provides the answer to the question of why the poor happened to be called %D: saying that it is because they are %D"k.Wdm.\(^{300}\) (Jastrow [1903] 1992:306).

\(^{299}\) *Don't add to the weights (burdens) of the poor.*

\(^{300}\) *crushed*
An interesting correlation between %D: and the verb ykiD\textsuperscript{301} is made in Leviticus Rabba s 34 from the standpoint that by giving to the poor a man receives divine approval. Thus, the beggar then says: \textit{yb ykd wa yb ykz}.\textsuperscript{302} Eventually the use of %D: purely as a designation of the poor started to change, even before the time of Christ, to also become a positive character quality. When the translators of the Septuagint came to Psalm 34 (33).19 they chose to translate \textit{x;Wr-yaek.D:} as \textit{tapeinou.j tw|/ pneu,mati}.\textsuperscript{303} \textit{Tapeino,j}, incidentally, is the word which the epistle of Barnabas and certain manuscripts of the Septuagint use to translate \textit{wn"y} in Isaiah 61.1. The plural of %D: is \textit{~yKiD:} and this is used in Sanhedrin 104a as a character trait on the same level as \textit{righteous: \sim h \sim ynk \sim h \sim ykd \sim h \sim yqydc}.\textsuperscript{305}

Those who are \textit{crushed in heart} and those who are \textit{pure in heart} could both be designated in unvocalized writing as \textit{bl-ykd}. The difference is that the former would be pronounced \textit{aB'li-yKeD:} and the latter as \textit{aB'li-ykeD>}. If, as Lachs, Schwarz and Black suggest, words of Jesus were contained in some sort of written document then a mispronunciation of \textit{bl-ykd} could have produced the change from \textit{broken (crushed) hearted} to \textit{pure in heart}. This still leaves the problem that Jesus never intended that the sixth beatitude be addressed to the \textit{pure in heart}.

A much better solution is to suggest that Jesus did address the \textit{pure in heart} and that in the context of announcing the fulfillment of Isaiah 61, mention of \textit{aB'li-ykeD>} was recognized as a play on words with \textit{aB'li-yKeD:} – itself synonymous with \textit{broken-hearted}.

\textsuperscript{301} to be pure
\textsuperscript{302} Be benefited through me or be made pure through me.
\textsuperscript{303} crushed in spirit
\textsuperscript{304} humble in spirit
\textsuperscript{305} They are poor (humble?); they are upright; they are righteous.
An analogous play on words occurs in the *Yalkut* to Psalms (848) regarding Psalm 93.3. The last line of this verse reads: ~y"k.D" tArh'n> Waf.yl.\textsuperscript{306} The word ~y"k.D" is said to stand for Wna' ~yKiD:.\textsuperscript{307} A similar play on words also referring to Psalm 93.3 occurs in *Bereshith Rabba* s 5 which takes ~y"k.D" to be a combination of %D" and am'y" allowing for the play on words: am'y" %DEh'l..\textsuperscript{308} The Aramaic reconstruction of the first hemistich will therefore be: aB'li-yked>D> !AhybeWj.

In order to appreciate the theory that this beatitude contains a play on the words between aB'li-yKeD: and aB'li-ykeD> one must remember that the Beatitudes are flowing within the stream of Jewish apocalyptic thought. The eschatological year of Jubilee seems to have been understood, even by Isaiah, to be the time that God reverses the misfortunes of his people and brings judgement on the oppressors. This is brought out in Isaiah 61.2 which equates the *year of the LORD’s favour* with the *day of vengeance of our God*, which in turn is linked to the comfort of those who mourn. The same theme reappears in Daniel chapter seven. The saints of the Most High only receive the kingdom after having been oppressed by the horn which *had eyes like the eyes of a man and a mouth that spoke boastfully*. The saints were defeated by this horn *until the Ancient of Days came and pronounced judgement in favour of the saints of the Most High, and the time came when they possessed the kingdom* (7.22).

The Apostle Paul makes an oblique, eschatological reference to the *holy ones* of Daniel chapter seven in a prayer in 1Thessalonians 3.13, saying: *May he strengthen your hearts so that you will be blameless and holy in the presence of our God and Father when our Lord Jesus comes with all his holy ones* (NIV).

This verse is extremely helpful for the discussion of how the *crushed/broken in heart* are

---

\textsuperscript{306} *The seas have lifted up their pounding waves* (NIV).

\textsuperscript{307} *we are crushed*

\textsuperscript{308} *to that sea there*
able to become the pure in heart. Paul understood that the result of the heart being strengthened is to be blameless [ἀμέτρος] in holiness. It is improbable that Paul is making an allusion to the sixth beatitude. It is much more reasonable to think that Paul is making a reference to a commonly held understanding of Daniel 7 and Isaiah 61 which (among other things) understood that in the Jubilee God would strengthen the broken-hearted and that the result would be that they would be pure in heart.

II.8.2.2 Reconstructing the Apodosis in Aramaic

II.8.2.2.1 ymix or az"x]

All of the Aramaic versions use the verb ymix to render the Greek verb ὁράω. This is especially interesting from the Syriac point of view for it seems to reflect a primitive Jewish Christian tradition. The most common Aramaic verb for to see is az"x]. It is often used to render Hebrew ha'lr" (Gesenius [1847] 1979:268). az"x] is a very common word in Eastern Aramaic (e.g., Syriac, Babylonian Aramaic, Imperial Aramaic) even showing up in biblical Aramaic (i.e., Dn 2.34, 41, 43; 3.19, 25; 5.5, 23; Ezr 4.14). Palestinian Aramaic would rather employ the verb ymix] (for instance, Targum Yerushalmi [Cairo Genizah Fragment] uses ymix] in Genesis 1.4 where Targum Onkelos uses az"x]). An Aramaic passage in Bereshit Rabba (14.8), in the context of seeing God, also uses ymix]: ytad am[l ywpal ywmx tad309 (Odeberg 1939 1:18).

309 You will see his face in the world to come.
The question of whether or not *Bereshit Rabba* also employs *az"x* in similar contexts is unsettled. In 35.2 Odeberg reads: *yypa rbs ymxml*\(^{310}\) (1939 1:38). Jastrow quotes this passage as reading *yapa rbs yzxym\(^{1}\) ([1903] 1992:99). He does, however, quote a similar line in *VeYikra Rabba* as saying: "\(^{\prime}kw yypa rbs ymzxym lyky !am\(^{311}\) (Jastrow [1903] 1992:952).

Aramaic portions of the Dead Sea Scrolls (e.g., 4Q196\(^{312}\) 1.11; 4Q552 1.2.3; 4Qproto Esther (d) 3.3; 4Q213-214\(^{313}\) A.1.2.18, 4.1.10, 4.2.3; 4Q541 6.4), on the other hand, uniformly use *az"x*. Rather than disproving that *ymix* reflects the more Palestinian vocabulary this only affirms that not all documents originating in Palestine were written in a Palestinian dialect of Aramaic. Obviously, Babylonian Aramaic could be employed there for literary purposes (Kutscher 1976:4).

Burney’s reconstruction of the apodosis is: *dehinnu, ni hama, yin lelaha*.\(^ {314}\) By using the present participle, \(!ylm;x\) to render *öψυνταλ*, Burney differs from Jeremias and Schwarz\(^ {315}\) who both use the imperfect (as do the ancient Aramaic versions, which all have *nwMXY*)\(^ {316}\) to reconstruct the future tense *öψυνταλ*. This is acceptable in the circumstances.\(^ {317}\) Therefore, the Aramaic reconstruction suggested here will also employ the participle.

---

\(^{310}\) *to see my face*

\(^{311}\) *Who can ever see the face of Abba Judan?*

\(^{312}\) Aramaic Tobit

\(^{313}\) Testament of Levi

\(^{314}\) *ah\'l'ale !ylm;x; !WNhiD>*

\(^{315}\) Schwarz suggests that *öψυνταλ* should be reconstructed as \(!Wmx.yl\). Jeremias also includes an anticipatory pronominal suffix. His suggestion is: *yahimuneh (= HynEWmx.y:).*

\(^{316}\) *!wmxy*: Thus, Syr\(^{k.c.p,cp}\)

\(^{317}\) When translating Greek texts Aramaic translators regularly prefer to use the imperfect tense to render the Greek future tense. The testimony of the various Syriac versions is tainted by the desire to accurately reflect the Greek text. The use of the participle to express what can only be rendered in English by the future tense seems to have been common in Palestine. The example from *Bereshit Rabba* 14.8 already
This quotation from *Bereshit Rabba* 14.8 also brings up another feature which must be assessed. The form *ywmx* is a singular, masculine *Pe’al* participle with an anticipative pronominal suffix. In Aramaic, when a verb governs a definite accusative an anticipative pronominal suffix is often joined (Stevenson 1962:84). This is not as common in the targums and other Palestinian texts as it is in Syriac (Stevenson 1962:84). Thus, it is tempting not to include such a suffix in the reconstruction offered here. Mitigating against this is the presence of the anticipative pronominal suffix in this text from *Bereshit Rabba* which also speaks of seeing God. Therefore, out of deference to the sensibilities of this unknown scribe the Aramaic reconstruction of the apodosis will be: *ah'l'ale yAmx; !WNhiD>.*

**II.8.2.3 Hebrew Reconstruction**

The Hebrew rendering of the first hemistich of this beatitude in Shem Tov’s Hebrew Matthew is *blh ykz yrXa* (Howard 1995:16). This most likely has been influenced by a Syriac version or another Aramaic tradition much like (or the same as) that which has been proposed here. It probably does not reflect how *OMatthew* knew it. In fact, it is clear that both he and James know the first hemistich of this beatitude in Hebrew, as: *bb'le yrEb' yrEv.a;.*

This is because both Matthew and James give a certain amount of evidence that this beatitude was associated with Psalm 24.4.

One of the features of this beatitude which has troubled scholars is the link between the *pure in heart* and the promise that *they will see God*. Finding in this beatitude a direct allusion to any Old Testament passage has proven elusive. A number of exegetes (see Dupont 1973:558 for a list) have seen here a reference to Psalm 24.3-4:

```
af'n"-aOl rv,a] bb'le-rb;W ~yIP;k; yqin> Avd>q' ~Aqm.Bi ~Wqy"-ymiW hwhy-rh;b. hl[,]y:-ym hm'r>mil. [B;v.nl
```

given serves to illustrate this: *you will see his face in the world to come* [*ytad aml[I ywpal ywmx tad*] (Odeberg 1939 1:18).

318 cf, Lach’s theory in §II.8.1.1
Who may ascend the hill of the Lord? Who may stand in his holy place? He who has clean hands and a pure heart, who does not lift up his soul to an idol or swear by what is false (NIV).

It is possible that OMatthew and James have also understood this beatitude to refer to Psalm 24.4. A case has already been made that James is aware of a Hebrew version of the Beatitudes. He makes an allusion to Psalm 24.4 in combination with an allusion to the Beatitudes, saying (Ja 4.8-9):

Come near to God and he will come near to you. Wash your hands, you sinners, and purify your hearts, you double-minded. Grieve, mourn and wail. Change your laughter to mourning and your joy to gloom (NIV).

The reciprocal use of ἐγγίζω for both God and the believer is reminiscent of the way the word בָּרִיא is used in temple language (Jastrow [1903] 1992:1410), making an allusion to Psalm 24.3-4 all the more likely. That James associates Psalm 24.3-4 with the Beatitudes can be gleaned by examining the next verse (4.9), which has a striking similarity to the third woe from Luke’s Sermon on the Plain (Lk 6.25b): οὐαὶ, οἱ γελῶντες νῦν, ὅτι πενθήσετε καὶ κλαύσετε. This woe has its counterpart in Luke’s third beatitude (6.21b), blessed are you who weep now, for you will laugh (NIV). The likelihood is that the reason Psalm 24.3-4 comes to his mind is that it shares the idiom בָּרִיא with the sixth beatitude.

A good case can be made that OMatthew had a Hebrew version before him which employed בָּרִיא simply from the fact that it appears as if the Greek text of Matthew 5.8 is deliberately trying to allude to Psalm 24.4 (Gundry 1982:71); the LXX

---
319 to come near
renders *bb'le-rb*; by καθαρός τῆς καρδιάς. Other evidence is admittedly quite slim. The comments of Jesus concerning oaths (Mt 5.33-37) forms part of the section devoted to commentary on the sixth beatitude (Goulder 1974:273, 292; see §II.7.4.1.1). That this section was originally part of the Sermon on the Mount is shown by the fact that James quotes from it (Ja 5.12). Psalm 24 was very familiar to Jews in the Second Temple period because it was recited in the Temple by the Levites on the first day of each week (*R Hash* 31a; *Tam* 7.4). Even to this day Judaism gives Psalm 24 greater attention than most other Psalms; it is found in the Authorised Daily Prayer Book four times (Singer 1962: 73, 84, 133, 209). Therefore, it makes sense that the first scripture Hebrew speaking people would think of in terms of being *pure in heart* would have been Psalm 24.4.

The Epistle of Barnabas (15.6-7) may be alluding to a traditional connection between this beatitude and Psalm 24.4 held by the early church when, in speaking of the Sabbath, he says: “Thou shalt sanctify it with clean hands and a pure heart.” If, then, anyone has at present the power to keep holy the day which God made holy, by being pure in heart, we are altogether deceived. Without getting into the doctrinal aspect of these words it is clear that Barnabas associates Matthew 5.8 with Psalm 24.4.

---

320 *Woe to you who laugh now, for you will mourn and weep* (NIV).
Also part of the commentary on the sixth beatitude is the section on adultery (Mt 5.27-30). A possible play on words with rb;\(^1\) takes place in 5.30, where Jesus says *it is better for you to lose one part of your body than for your whole body to go into hell*. The Christian Palestinian version translates ζῶν μελῶν σου\(^2\) as krB)\(^3\) (Lewis & Gibson [1899] 1971:63). The word rb,ae, meaning limb, then gives a pun, suggesting that one needs to be willing to lose an rb,ae in order to be bb'le-rb;. The idea that this word has been deliberately injected into this section to create such a pun is affirmed by the fact that the word μελός is not present in the two parallel passages (Mt 18.8-9 and Mk 9.43-47).\(^4\)

The scribes at Qumran never speak of the ble yreB' but they do speak of a pure heart. To express this in Hebrew they use the words rAhj' ble (4Q525 2.2.1; 4Q436 1.1.10).

The term rAhj' ble occurs in the Old Testament in Psalm 51.12 which says: rAhj' ble yBir>qiB. vDEx; !Akn" x;Wrw> ~yhiOla/ yli-ar"B.\(^5\) None of the examples from Qumran give any reason to suggest that the first hemistich of this beatitude should include the words rAhj' ble since they only speak about a heart that is pure rather than the pure in heart.

---

\(^1\) your limb

\(^2\) $rba$

\(^3\) In fact another possible Hebrew play on words occurs in Matthew 23.26 which utilizes the fact that the word rB; can mean both clean and outside (Jastrow [1903] 1992:188). Jesus uses the ceremonial cleansing of cups (cf, Mk 7.4) as a metaphor to condemn the greed and self-indulgence (NIV) of the Pharisees. They are told (Mt 23.25) that if they cleanse the inside of the cup, *then the outside also will be clean* (NIV). This last line, in Mishnaic Hebrew might be: rB; ahey> rB;h;v.K..

\(^4\) Ps 51.10: *Create in me a pure heart, O God, and renew a steadfast spirit within me* (NIV).
The reconstruction of the apodosis of this beatitude into Hebrew is rather straightforward. Though the Greek verb ὑπάρχω can be reconstructed using ἥζ"χ', Delitzsch preferred to reconstruct the apodosis as: ~yhiOla/ ta, War>yl ~he-yKi. Aside from the use of ~he-yKi to express ἀπὸ τι ἀντίλ (which has in this thesis been rejected in favour of ~hev, it is much easier to believe that over-all this is the correct reconstruction and that ὑπάρχω stands for ha'r" rather than ἥζ"χ'. Therefore the reconstruction of the apodosis here will be: ~yhiOla/ ta, War>yl ~hev,.

II.8.2.4 Hebrew and Aramaic Reconstructions

Aramaic

ah'l'ale yAmx; !WNhiD> aB'li-yked>D> !AhybeWj

Hebrew

~yhiOla/ ta, War>yl ~hev, bb'le yrEb' yrEv.a;

II.8.3 The Meaning of This Beatitude

II.8.3.1 Seeing God = Being in the Presence of God

The meaning this beatitude would have had for the hearers may best be addressed starting with the apodosis. Seeing God was understood in ancient Judaism both figuratively and literally. This can best be illustrated by the fact that in Second Temple times a blind person was exempt from going to the temple because he would not be able to see God (Jastrow [1903] 1992:1435). Perhaps this has some bearing on Jesus’ words in John 9.41 where after having just healed a blind man, in answer to the Pharisees over whether or not they are also blind, he says: If you were blind, you would not be guilty of sin; but now that you claim you can see, your guilt remains (NIV).

325 The Hebrew New Testament of Salkinson and Ginsburg gives the second half of this beatitude as: ~yhiOla/-ta, Wzx/y< ~he-yKi. Similarly, Lachs has: ~yhiOla/ Wzx/y< hm'he yKi (Schwarz 1985:303).
Seeing God implies that God is willing to act on one’s behalf. A link between the pure in heart and God’s acting on their behalf was already made in Old Testament times. For instance, Psalm 73.1 says that God is good to the pure in heart.\footnote{bb'le yrEb'l. ~yhiOla/ laer"f.yll. bAj}

The duality of God both seeing and being seen is reflected in 4Q434 (2.2-3) which not only says that God has opened his eyes\footnote{wny[ xqp} to the downtrodden\footnote{ld} but has, because of his abundant mercies, comforted the poor and opened their eyes to see his ways.\footnote{wykrd ta twarl ~hyny[ xqpyw ~ywn[ !nx} This seems to be an allusion to Isaiah 61. The Hebrew text of Isaiah 61.1, which contains: \textit{x;Aq-xq;P. ~yriWsa]l;w.}, is changed in the Septuagint to read: τυφλοίς ἀνάβληψιν.\footnote{and (to proclaim) release from darkness [lit.: the opening of limits?] for the prisoners (NIV)} The Septuagint’s translation of this clause may reflect an ancient understanding of the Hebrew which is shared by 4Q434. Jesus takes up this theme of the blind seeing elsewhere, connecting lack of sight with impurity of heart. In Matthew 15.1-20 Jesus deals with criticism from the Pharisees. In reference to them he quotes (Mt 15.8) from Isaiah 29.13: These people honour me with their lips, but their hearts are far from me. He then goes on to call the Pharisees blind guides (Mt 15.14).

A pure heart is often connected with worshipping before God’s face. In Odes of Solomon 20.3 we find: The sacrifice of the Lord is righteousness, and purity of heart and lips (Platt 1927:130). This is echoed in the book of 2 Enoch (44.1-3) which says: Whoever hastens to make offering before the Lord’s face, the Lord for his part will hasten that offering by granting of his work...When the Lord demands bread, or candles, or flesh, or any other sacrifice, then that is nothing; but God demands pure hearts, and with all that only tests the heart of man (Platt: 1927:97).

\footnote{326 bb'le yrEb'l. ~yhiOla/ laer"f.yll. bAj}
\footnote{327 wny[ xqp}
\footnote{328 ld}
\footnote{329 wykrd ta twarl ~hyny[ xqpyw ~ywn[ !nx}
\footnote{330 and (to proclaim) release from darkness [lit.: the opening of limits?] for the prisoners (NIV)}
\footnote{331 The blind will see.
A link between being *pure in heart* and *seeing God* is also demonstrated in a passage from the Mount Athos manuscript of the Words of Levi in the Testament of the Twelve Patriarchs: *Purify my heart, O Lord, from all impurity, that I myself may be lifted up to You. Do not hide Your face from the son of Your servant Jacob* (Wise et al 1996:252). Seeing the face of God means being in his presence. This sort of language was very common in relation to Temple worship. For instance, Exodus 23.17 says that three times a year all males are to *appear* [hary] before the Lord. *Sanhedrin* 4b expands on this suggesting that these letters can be pronounced either as ha,r>yl332 or ha,r"yE333 because twaryl ab $k twarl abX $rdk.334

II.8.3.2 Pure in Heart = Priests of God

Dupont (1973:559) points out the priestly imagery resident in the background of this beatitude by referring to Leviticus 9.5. After having given elaborate instructions for the ordination of priests Moses instructs Aaron to make sacrifices for himself and Israel, saying: *~k,ylea] ha'r>nI hwhy ~AYh,*335 (Lv 9.4). In 9.6 Moses suggests that these sacrifices are necessary for the glory of God to appear: *ar"yEw> Wf[]T; hwhy hW"ci-rv,a] rb'D"h; hz< hwhy dAbk. ~k,ylea].*336 Targum Pseudo-Jonathan has an interesting addition to this verse: *dy !mw !wkbl !m aXyb arcy ty wrb[a !wdb[t 'h dyqpd amgtp !yd hXm rmaw 'hd atnykX rqya !wkl yltgw* 337 (Ginsburger 1903:186).

---

332 *He shall see* (the Lord).
333 *He shall be seen* (by the Lord).
334 *As He comes to see, so does He come to be seen.*
335 *Today the LORD will appear to you* (NIV).
336 *This is what the LORD has commanded you to do, so that the glory of the LORD may appear to you.*
337 *And Moses said this is the word which the LORD commanded that you should do: do away with evil inclination from your heart and by that he will reveal to you the glory of the Shekinah of the LORD.*
This indicates that there was a Palestinian Targum tradition which understood that purification plus radicale est nécessaire. . . Pour être admis à voir la gloire de Dieu, il fautse purifier le cœur (Dupont 1973:559).

In 2 Enoch 42.6 the first of a series of nine beatitudes is given which says: Happy is the person who reverences the name of the LORD, and who serves in front of his face always (Betz 1995:102). Priests were such people who served before the Lord and as such Malachi (2.7) likens the priests to tAab’c.-hwhy %a;l.m;339 Malachi’s understanding that priests are like unto angels is the key to understanding the logical link between being pure in heart and seeing God. The Sifre on Numbers juxtaposes Malachi 2.7 with Isaiah 61.6 (which says that the Israelites will be called priests of the Lord) saying: beloved are the Israelites which he calls priests; beloved are the priests for they are compared to the angels of the presence. The Qumran community understood the angels of the presence to be a type of the priests and their functions (e.g., IQSb 4.25-26, IQH 6.13; cf, 4Q418 frag 81) (Dupont 1973:561).340

II.8.3.3 Connecting the Apodosis to Isaiah 61

Seeing God implies being in God’s presence. Coming before God was expressed in Hebrew as coming ~yhwla ynpl.341 The Hebrew word ynpl, in turn, was routinely translated in the targums by the Aramaic word ymdq.342 Being received by God and seeing his face is thus expressed in Aramaic as being before the Lord. This religious usage of ymdq indicating being in God’s presence is seen in the targum of Isaiah 61.2 where the year of the LORD’s favour is translated as the year of favour before the LORD.

338 A more radical purification is necessary . . . In order to be allowed to see the glory of God he must purify his heart.
339 the angel of the Lord of hosts
340 As mentioned earlier, the term xwr ywm[ was used by the sectarians at Qumran for themselves. This is used parallel to a reference to those who are purified [~yqqwzm]; an allusion to Malachi 3.3 which speaks of God purifying the Levitical priesthood (which theme also finds its way into 1QH 5.16 and 4Q511 35.2) (Sekki 1989:122).
341 to the face of God
This indicates that the reversal of fortunes the poor, broken-hearted, mourners, etc. receive in the year of Jubilee was understood by the targumist to be a result of favour in the presence of the Lord. Dupont states that in the context of Isaiah 61.1-3 the attitude of these people is to be that of gens qui se savent “vides devant Dieu” et ont tout à recevoir de lui\(^{343}\) (1969, 3:548). The apodosis of this beatitude may be a paraphrase of this understanding of the year of the LORD’s favour which entailed seeing God by virtue of being in his presence. [cf, the language of court seen in 2Ki 25.19, where y aerome %l,M,h;-ynEp.\(^{344}\) indicates royal counsellors (de Vaux 1960:196-197).]

The idea that those who are pure in heart would have favour with God finds testimony in the Targum to Proverbs. Proverbs 22.11 says: \(\text{%l,m, Wh[erE wyt'p'v. !xe ble-rwh'j. bheao.}^{345}\) The targumist transforms this to say that I Hytew"p.fid> ad"s.xib.W aB'li ykeD> ah'l'a/ ~xer aK'l.m;l rBex;t.y:.\(^{346}\)

The use of the verb ~xer> in connection with the aB'li ykeD> is especially pertinent to this discussion considering the fact that the Aramaic reconstruction of the previous beatitude employs the verb ~xer> twice. The significance of this beatitude following that of the merciful, which has overtones of giving to the poor, gives one reason to remember the cry of the beggar in Leviticus Rabba s 34: \(\text{yb ykd.}^{347}\) By being merciful (i.e., giving to the poor) one is made pure. This gives confirmation to the idea that the original beatitudes were to be understood as a series in an ascending order (Betz 1995:108).

II.8.3.4 Midrash on Adultery: Commentary on the Sixth Beatitude

\(^{342}\) before  
\(^{343}\) people who know that they are ¨living before God¨ and that they will be received by him.  
\(^{344}\) those who see the face of the king  
\(^{345}\) He who loves a pure heart and whose speech is gracious will have the king for his friend.  
\(^{346}\) God loves the pure in heart and by the graciousness of his lips he will associate with the king.  
\(^{347}\) Be made pure through me.
That Jesus’ teaching on adultery (Mt 5.27-32) formed part of his commentary on this beatitude was suggested in the previous chapter, both in Goulder’s outline (which in this thesis is suggested to have been a part of the original Aramaic Sermon on the Mount) and in the revised outline used with the Hebrew translation of the Sermon on the Mount as well as earlier in this chapter. As if to confirm this, the only place in Matthew 5.11-48 that mentions the word heart is here (Mt 5.28).

With this in mind it is easy to see that there is a deliberate contrast being made in 5.28 between seeing God and seeing a woman. The homiletical application is obvious. To paraphrase:

_Blessed are the pure in heart for they shall see God. What are you seeing? That which you see is an indication of the condition of your heart. Thus, if a man looks lustfully at a woman he has already committed adultery in his heart and shows that his heart is not pure but full of evil._

This is directly in line with the addition to Leviticus 9.6 in Targum Pseudo-Jonathan. There, the admonition to the people: wkbl Im aXyb arcy ty wrb[a]³⁴⁸ can be construed to indicate coming away from sexual sin.

The Hebrew equivalent of _av'yBi ar"c.yl_ would be [_r"h' rc,yE_. Jastrow translates [_r"h' rc,yE_ as _sensual passion_ ([1903] 1992:590) when it appears in _Avoth_ 2.16, along with !_y[e] _[r"h']³⁴⁹ and tAYrI.B.h; ta;n>fiw>³⁵⁰ as the characteristics Rabbi Joshua lists which can lead to death (Singer 1962:258). _ar"c.yl_ or _rc,yE_ can exist on its own in this way. For example, the word _ar"c.yl_ by itself, as an expression for sexual lust, appears in _Sanhedrin_ 107a, where David describes his lust, saying: _anypyyk hwh yrcyl_³⁵¹ (see §II.6.2.1.2).

---

³⁴⁸ rid yourselves of the evil inclination
³⁴⁹ evil eye
³⁵⁰ hatred of fellow men
³⁵¹ my inclination hungers
It is not that Jesus is alluding to Leviticus 9.5 necessarily, but to the thought expressed in the Palestinian Targum tradition there which influenced even how ancient Jews understood Isaiah 57.

Consider the command in Isaiah 57.14: yMi; %r<D<mi lAvk.mi Wmyrlh',\textsuperscript{352} which is given in preparation for the coming of God to the pure in heart. This was interpreted in the Talmud as a command to remove [r"h' rc,yE\textsuperscript{353} (Succ 52a).

The emphasis on seeing is what prompts the admonition to pluck out an eye if it causes you to sin (Mt 5.29). It is interesting that though the section on adultery is teamed together with that on divorce as commentary on the beatitude for the pure in heart, it is only the sin of adultery which is said to be done in one’s heart. Divorce in the heart is not condemned in so many words, though there was an idiom for it in ancient Judaism. The term bLeh; tv;WrG> occurs in Nedarim 20b, interpreted by Jastrow to mean one whom her husband is determined to divorce ([1903] 1992:267).

\textsuperscript{352} Remove the obstacles out of the way of my people (NIV).

\textsuperscript{353} sensual passion
For James, having a *pure heart* means ridding your heart of ζηλον πικρον\(^\text{354}\) and ἐρυθείαν\(^\text{355}\) (Ja 3.14). He contrasts such *earthy wisdom* in 3.17 with the *wisdom that comes from above* (NIV), which is *first of all pure* (NIV).\(^\text{356}\) This section (Ja 3.13-18) leads into a section (4.1-12) exhorting Christians to be humble, at peace with one another and to submit to God. Here, as in 2.11 he alludes to the commandments provided as commentary on the Beatitudes in the Sermon on the Mount. He once again accuses the readers of being guilty of murder (4.2), saying, φονεύτε καὶ ζηλοῦτε,\(^\text{357}\) which he parallels with μάχεσθε καὶ πολεμεῖτε.\(^\text{358}\) Once again he is taking Jesus’ application of the commandment not to kill with regard to the fifth beatitude. James then explains why the prayers of these people are not answered: Αἰτεῖτε καὶ οὐ λαμβάνετε, διότι κακῶς αἰτεῖσθε, ἵνα ἐν ταῖς ἡδοναῖς ὑμῶν δαπανήσητε.\(^\text{359}\)

The Peshitta renders ἐν ταῖς ἡδοναῖς ὑμῶν δαπανήσητε as nwuKtG1YGir^ nwuSrtatda.\(^\text{360}\) It is tempting to read this as a variation of Ἁκτ'g>yglr> !Wsrl.tid>. In Rabbinic literature the verb sr:a] means to betroth\(^\text{361}\) (Jastrow [1903] 1992:124). This could be translated as *because you would be betrothed to your desire*. Perhaps Jesus’ remarks about divorce and remarriage form the context for what James is condemning. This prompts him to call them μοιχαλίδες (4.4). Whatever it was they were praying about, James is saying that they have impure hearts and that according to the Sermon on the Mount such people are, by Jesus’ reckoning, *adulterers*.

---

\(^{354}\) bitter envy (NIV)

\(^{355}\) selfish ambition (NIV)

\(^{356}\) James also alludes to the seventh beatitude by adding that this wisdom is ἐπείξα εἰρηνική [peace-loving (NIV)], and the fifth beatitude by adding that it is μεστὴ ἐλέους [full of mercy (NIV)].

\(^{357}\) you kill and covet

\(^{358}\) you quarrel and fight

\(^{359}\) When you ask, you do not receive, because you ask with wrong motives, that you may spend what you get on your pleasures (NIV).

\(^{360}\) !Wkt.g"yglr> !Wsrt>t;TiD>

\(^{361}\) syrlt.ai: to be betrothed
II.8.3.5 Midrash on Oaths: Commentary on the Sixth Beatitude

In addition to the midrash on adultery and divorce Jesus adds to the commentary on the sixth beatitude a section on oaths. As suggested earlier, it was easy for a Hebrew speaker to connect this with Psalm 24.4 because of the translation of aB’li yked>D> as bb’le-yrEbl. Jesus’ admonition, in 5.37, to ἐστω δὲ ὁ λόγος ὑμῶν ναι ναί, οὐ οὐ 362 may have been a common saying. An extremely similar saying appears in the Talmud. In Baba Metsia 49a: qdc $lx alw qdc $lx lhl.363 It is hardly likely that this saying reflects the influence of Jesus. Rather, it shows that there was also within rabbinic circles a distaste for the type of swearing Jesus is speaking out against (Birnbaum 1967:143).

The question is what was the original purpose of bringing in this topic? Part of the answer lies in the fact that this section makes allusion to Isaiah 66.1. Jesus is not content to allude in his teaching to Isaiah 49, 57 and 61. He also wants to bring in Isaiah 66. This, the last chapter in Isaiah, is one of the most apocalyptic of the whole book.

Allusions to this chapter have already been identified for the first and second beatitudes. In the admonition against oaths in Matthew 5.33-37 a descending list of things not to swear by are given (i.e., Heaven, Earth, Jerusalem and one’s head). Three of them are mentioned in Isaiah 66 (Heaven and Earth, 66.1; Jerusalem, 66.10). References to Isaiah 66 carried with them the reminder that God was coming and his glory and his judgement would be seen (66.18).364 This may be one reason this scripture is alluded to in a section commenting on a beatitude that promises that they will see God.

The apocalyptic nature of this beatitude only really becomes clear when one understands that it is paired with the following beatitude for the peacemakers. In the same way that the first and third beatitudes both allude to Isaiah 66, and the same way that the fourth and fifth beatitudes both allude to Isaiah 49, so the sixth and seventh beatitudes allude to

362 Let your ’Yes’ be ’Yes,’ and your ’No,’ ’No’ (NIV).
363 Let your Yes be true and your No be true (cf, Mekh Yithro s 4: lhl l[w wal wal l]).
II.8.3.6 How is this Beatitude to be Understood?

As stated in the beginning of this chapter, the only commentators who have suggested a link between this beatitude and Isaiah 61 are those who actually feel that the wording is a mistake and that Jesus actually said: *Blessed are the broken-hearted.* If nothing else one of the more important contributions of this thesis is the way an honest effort has been made to link *the broken-hearted* with *the pure in heart.* The idea that the term *pure in heart* is a play on words with *crushed in heart* also has tremendous implications for exegesis.

As mentioned above, even in ancient times this beatitude was understood in terms of Psalm 24. Thus, modern interpreters and commentaries [e.g., Trites (1992:188), Betz (1995:135), Newman & Stine (1988:116)] would not be entirely wrong in doing the same thing. An important thing to realize, however, is that in interpretations which seek allusions to Jewish Temple purity rites and liturgies (Dupont 1973:557-566), which early Christians must also have done since the Hebrew version lends itself so naturally to this (Ja 4.8-9), the emphasis is placed on purifying one’s own heart. Alternatively, seeing this beatitude as an allusion to Isaiah 61.1 (by way of Is 57.15) engenders an interpretation on how God uses trial and tribulation to purify his people.

As with the Church Fathers, who gave a mystical interpretation to the words *they shall see God* (Betz 1995:108), so modern interpreters have difficulty with this idiom except in so far as it relates to the hereafter (e.g., Newman and Stine 1988:116). It is possible that the Hebrew speaking church also gave this beatitude such an emphasis. Betz (1995:137) suggests that *seeing God* is implied later in the Sermon on the Mount (Mt 7.21-23) in terms of the Final Judgement.

The understanding of trial and hardship as a road to purification, with *seeing God* as a term for vindication is found in Job 19.25-27. Giving this beatitude its (rightful?) ‘Aramaic’ interpretation means connecting *the pure in heart* with *the crushed/broken-hearted* and understanding that God stands ready to vindicate their cause.
Chapter Nine

Blessed are the peacemakers for they shall be called the sons of God.

Matthew 5:9: μακάριοι οἱ εἰρηνοποιοί, ὃτι αὐτοὶ νεόι θεοῦ κληθήσονται

II.9.1 The Seventh Beatitude: An Allusion to Targum Isaiah 57.19

As mentioned in the previous chapter, the seventh beatitude also alludes to Isaiah 57. To be specific, it is an allusion to Isaiah 57.19b. In Hebrew this half of the verse says: wytiap'r>W hwhy rm;a' bArQ'l;w> qAxr"l' ~Alv' ~Alv'. This is rendered somewhat differently in the Isaiah Targum: !ymid>q'l'mi ytiy>r:Aa

The allusion to this verse in the seventh beatitude stems from the idiom to make peace, used of God, found in the Targum to this verse, not in the Hebrew version. Where the Hebrew text proclaims peace, in the Targum God is said to make peace.

II.9.1.1 Isaiah 57 in Apocalyptic Thought

A look at the full text of the Targum to Isaiah 57.19 will be helpful:

He that created speech for the lips of the mouth of all men has said: Prophesy, peace will be made for the righteous that have observed my Law from the past and

365 “Peace, peace, to those far and near,” says the LORD. “And I will heal them.”
Peace will be made for the repentant one who has returned to the Law recently. The LORD has said: I will forgive them.

Peace in the targum tradition of Isaiah 57.19 is synonymous with forgiveness of sin. Where the Hebrew text says, in this verse, wytiap'r>W, the Targum says: !Ahl. qABv.a,w>. Secondly, peace is made for those who have submitted themselves to God and walk in his laws. This entails being in covenant relationship with God, which allows him to act on their behalf. Thirdly, the prophet himself becomes a peacemaker by proclaiming the message of peace God has spoken. This is not just a prophecy for future events but a call to repentance.

By noting that it is to the Targum tradition and not the Masoretic Text to which this beatitude points, the evidence is once again suggesting that Jesus originally delivered the Beatitudes in Aramaic and that only later were they translated into Hebrew. Of course, the supposition that the Targum of Isaiah 57.19b forms the pivotal allusion for this beatitude cannot simply be assumed. What other basis is there for thinking that this beatitude was formed from an allusion to the version of Isaiah 57.19 found in Targum Jonathan?

The biggest confirmation comes from the fact that the early Church incorporated the targumic interpretation of Isaiah 57.19 in its theology. This can be seen in the way Paul appeals to this verse in Ephesians 2.13-18:

But now in Christ Jesus you who once were far away have been brought near through the blood of Christ. For he himself is our peace, who has made the two one and has destroyed the barrier, the dividing wall of hostility, by abolishing in his flesh the law with its commandments and regulations. His purpose was to create in himself one new man out of the two, thus making peace, and in this one body to reconcile both of them to God through the cross, by which he put to death

---

366 Peace will be made for the righteous that have observed my Law from the past and peace will be made for the repentant one who has returned to the Law recently.

367 I will heal him.

368 I will forgive them.
their hostility. He came and preached peace to you who were far away and peace to you who were near. For through him we both have access to the Father by one Spirit (NIV).

Paul is using the Hebrew text but he shows his familiarity with the Targum by his use of such words and idioms as: πνεων ειρήνην (15), εὐγγελίσατο ειρήνην (17), τὸν νόμον (15).

That Paul relates Isaiah 57.19 to the seventh beatitude (or at least to a theology which it engendered) is quite likely since his whole point is that by making peace Jesus has given both Jews and Gentiles access to the Father (i.e., they become sons of God). Here Paul uses the antithesis resident in the words near and far off to describe Jews and Gentiles. In a parallel passage in Colossians 1.20 he refers to Christ making peace and applies the near and far off categories from Isaiah 57.19 to things in heaven and things on earth.

II.9.1.2 Making Peace > Peacemaker: Evidence from 4Q246

In the targumic interpretation it is God who will make peace. How does mention of God making peace become a call for men to become peacemakers, and how does this, in turn, lead to them being called sons of God? The answer to this question starts with the manner in which (especially) Isaiah 57, 61, 66 and Daniel 7 were conflated in Jewish apocalyptic thinking. God makes peace for those who come to him in repentance and submit to him (Targ Is 57.19). This occurs in the time when God intervenes in the lives of the oppressed (Is 61.1-3). It will be both a Jubilee and a day of judgement (Is 61.2), as God defeats his (and their) enemies and delivers an eternal kingdom to the saints (Dn 7.13-27). The people of God are represented by an eschatological figure who is both Son of Man (Dn 7.13, 27) and Son of God. Those who benefit in this visitation of God then

369 making peace; cf, dybe[lt.yl am'l'v.

370 preached peace; cf, am'l'v. ay"bin>

371 the Law; cf, at'y>r:Aa

372 The vocabulary of several of the Beatitudes (as well as the Lord’s Prayer) is present in Colossians chapter one. Paul refers to the inheritance of the saints (a reference to Daniel 7.27) as the kingdom of his (God’s) beloved Son in verses 12-13. He then proceeds to describe Jesus’ activity in creation (showing that
participate with him in reconciling all things – people (Is 66.19) as well as creation (Is 66.22).

This can be amply illustrated from an Aramaic text among the Dead Sea Scrolls known as The Son of God Text or 4Q246. This work consists of fragments of two columns of text. It is in the pseudo-Daniel tradition (Eisenman & Wise 1992:68) and describes a vision which has great affinity to Daniel 7.13-28. The mention in this scroll of a messianic figure who is termed the son of God has received considerable attention since a portion was published in 1974 (Wise et al 1996:268).

Column two, line one states: 

hnwrqy !wyl[ rbw rmaty la yd hrb. \[373\]

It must be said that this does not necessarily refer to a Jewish Messiah. Some have understood this line to refer to an earthly king (such as Antiochus Epiphanes) who garners to himself divine appellations (Wise et al 1992:269). Cook goes so far as to say that a careful reading of the text “confirms the ‘Antichrist’ option” (Wise et al 1996:269). However, with all due respect to his abilities as a scholar (as well as to any others who are so like minded), this view should be considered erroneous.

4Q246 column 2 is given by Eisenman and Wise (1992:69; translation mine) as:

ayqyzk hnwrqy !wyl[ rbw rmaty la yd hrb 1

l[ !wklm[ wnX awht !htwklm !k atyzx yd 2

hnydml hnydm Xwdy ~[l ~[ !wXdy alkw a[ra 3

brx !m xyny alkw la ~[ ~wqy d[ 4

lew]dy jwXqb htxra lwkw ~l[ twklm htwklm 5

@sy a[ra !m brx ~lv db[y alkw jXqb a[ra 6

hlyab abr la !wdgsy hl atnydm lk 7

!hlk hdyb !tny !ymm[ brq hl db[y awh 8

he associates Jesus with the Jewish conception of the Memra of the Lord). It is clear in this passage that Paul equates Jesus’ role as peacemaker with his position as the Son of God who has authority over creation.
ymwht lkw ~l[ !jlX hnjlX yhwmdq hmry  

1. He will be said to be the son of God and the son of the Most High he will be called. As the shooting star
2. which you saw, so will their kingdom be. Years will they reign upon
3. the earth and everyone will be trampling (one another) – people against people and country will trample country.
4. Until the people of God rise up. Then everyone will rest from the sword.
5. His kingdom is an everlasting kingdom and all his ways are in righteousness. He will judge
6. the Earth in righteousness and all will make peace and the sword will cease from the earth
7. and every city will bow down to him. The great God, with his help,
8. he will wage war for him. Peoples will be given into his hand. All of them
9. he will cast away before him. His sovereignty is an eternal sovereignty and all the depths of

The idea that the figure mentioned is villainous stems from the fact that the first column (1.4) mentions that a[ra l[ aht hq]. This is a clear reference to the eschatological victory of God and his people over their enemies.

373 He will be said (to be) the son of God and they will call him the son of the most high.
374 Oppression will be on the earth.
375 … until the people of God rise up and everyone will rest from the sword.
The next line (2.5) speaks not of their kingdom but, rather, his kingdom being an everlasting kingdom. Is this then the kingdom of the son of God figure or the people of God? Cook flouts the clearly written text and translates htwklm as their kingdom (Wise et al 1996:270). “A careful reading of the text” should have caused Cook to recognize that the author is making an allusion to Daniel 7.27:

*Then the sovereignty, power and greatness of the kingdoms under the whole heaven will be handed over to the saints, the people of the Most High. His kingdom will be an everlasting kingdom, and all rulers will obey him* (NIV).

This verse from Daniel appears to use the word his in reference to the Most High (i.e., God), but apparently there were those in ancient times (such as the author of 4Q246) who understood it in reference to the figure of the son of man in verse thirteen.

The terms God and Most High are routinely used together in Jewish Apocalyptic literature. For example, in the book of Jubilees (12.19) Abraham uses the terms God and Most High in apposition to one another in a prayer concerning the kingdom of God: *My God, the Most High God, you alone are God to me. And you created everything and everything which is was the work of your hands, and you and your kingdom I have chosen* (Jubilees 12.19). Among the Dead Sea Scrolls: 1QS 4.20-22; 10.11-12; 11.15; 1QH 4.31; 6.33.

In short, these fragments show:

---

376 htwklm
377 ~l[ twklm
378 That the term son of man, in its messianic sense, was equated in the first century with the term son of God is easily established by referring to Matthew 26.63-64, Mark 14.61-62 and Luke 22.67-70. There in his trial before the Jewish leaders the terms Christ, son of man and son of God (Mark uses the term son of the blessed one) are equated. That Jesus is referred to (albeit by demons) as both son of God (Mt 8.29) and son of the Most High (Mk 5.7) is noteworthy. An interesting passage from the Odes of Solomon (36.3) seems to indicate that there was a correlation between the son of man in Daniel and the Messiah (anointed one of the Spirit), called the Son of God: *The Spirit brought me forth before the face of the Lord: and, although a son of man, I was named the Illuminate, the Son of God* (Platt 1927:137). The last verse in this Ode (vs 8) says: *And my access to Him was in peace; and I was established by the Spirit of His government. Hallelujah* (Platt 1927:137).
1. A figure (whether Messiah or Anti-Christ) who is called the son of God\textsuperscript{379} (2.1)
2. His kingdom is an everlasting kingdom\textsuperscript{380} (2.5).
3. This everlasting kingdom is established when the people of God rise up and everyone will rest from the sword\textsuperscript{381} (2.4).
4. When the kingdom is established it states that all will make peace and the sword will cease from the earth\textsuperscript{382} (2.6) and all the nations will bow down to him\textsuperscript{383} (2.7).

What is important for the investigation of this beatitude is the way in which vocabulary common to 4Q246 and Matthew 5.9 is understood. How is the one called the son of God linked with making peace?

In line six, everyone will make peace is parallel to the sword will cease from the earth. Observe these phrases side by side:

\[
\text{@sy a[ra !m brx} \quad \sim\text{IX db[y alkw}
\]

Line four, in a similar way, states both that the people of God will rise up and everyone will rest from the sword.

\[
\text{brx !m xy}n\text{y alkw} \quad \text{la ~[ ~wqy d[}
\]

Resting from the sword is certainly synonymous with the sword ceasing. The people of God are involved in bringing about an end to warfare. Therefore, it would not be unfair to say that the people of God can also be termed those who make peace or peacemakers. It would then follow that because the making of peace is a prelude to the nations bowing down in worship that peacemakers, can be thought of as those who cause the ungodly to worship God.

\textsuperscript{379} \text{rmaty la yd hrb}
\textsuperscript{380} \text{~[ twklm htwklm}
\textsuperscript{381} \text{brx !m xy}n\text{y alkw la ~[ ~wky}
\textsuperscript{382} \text{@sy a[ra !m brx ~lv db[y alkw}
II.9.1.3 4Q246 and Isaiah 57.19b

Men become *peacemakers* by the ly"a/\(^{384}\) of the God who *makes peace*. ly"a/\(^{384}\) is not an especially common word so its presence in 4Q246 2.7 must be noted. ly"a/\(^{384}\) comes at the end of line seven and relates to line eight.

\[\text{hleyab abr la !wdgsy hl atnydm lk} \quad 7\]
\[!hlk hdyb !tny !ymm[ brq hl db[y awh \quad 8\]

7. *and every city will bow down to him. The great God, with his help,*
8. *he will wage war for him. Peoples will be given into his hand. All of them*

It is with God’s *help* that the *son of God* can *make war*. It is highly ironic (perhaps intentionally so) that *making war* and *making peace* are, in effect, used synonymously in this text. Both result in people coming under the rule of God. Both require the ly"a/\(^{384}\) of God. The need for the ly"a/\(^{384}\) of God in order to *make war* is amply illustrated here; for *making peace* one can easily find a reference in the Midrash Tehillim to Psalm 88.5. This Psalm is the only place in the Bible in which ly"a/\(^{385}\) appears.\(^{385}\) The Midrash comments on the psalmist’s lament that (Ps 88.5b) *I was as a man without ly"a/\(^{386}\) and adds (referring specifically to Isaiah 57.19) 'h lv, Aly"a/ yliWlyai were it not for the peacemaking help of the LORD* (Jastrow [1903] 1992:48). To paraphrase: *I would have been a man without help were it not for the fact that God makes peace for the righteous.*

Thus, as in 4Q246 the ly"a/\(^{386}\) of God is used to subdue the enemy on behalf of those who belong to God.

II.9.1.4 4Q246 and Isaiah 61

\(^{383}\) !wdgsy hl atnydm lk\(\ldots\)
\(^{384}\) *patronage, help*
\(^{385}\) ly"a/\(^{385}\) is a loan word from Aramaic (Brown et al [1906] 1999:33).
\(^{386}\) ly"a/-lyae rb,g\(\ldots\)
4Q246 2.1 can also be tied to Isaiah 61. The verbs rma and arq are used in verse six of the Isaiah Targum analogously to the way they are used in 4Q246.

Targum Isaiah 61.6  4Q246 2.1
!wrqtt yyd aynhk !wta  rmaty la yd hrb
rmaty anhla ~dq !yXmXmd  hnwrqy !wyl[ rbw

In the same way that son of God and son of the most high are used synonymously in 4Q246 so priests and ministers before God (Heb: ministers of God) are used in Isaiah 61.6. In addition, the subjugation of the nations (such as that which 4Q246 describes) by God is assumed in Isaiah 61.6 when it says that you will feed on the wealth of nations and in their riches you will boast (NIV).

The comparison above between the parallel lines in 4Q246 and Isaiah 61.6 is apt. Whether or not there is an allusion to Isaiah 61.6, the way the words named and called are used helps to establish certain points in apocalyptic thinking. Those who participate in God’s consummation will be called with a new name or designation (cf, Is 62.2, 12).

The fact that the previous beatitude had overtones of serving God in a priestly way is of pertinence here. In Isaiah 61.6 the context suggests that being called a priest of the LORD is not for the purpose of representing men before God, but rather, to represent God before the defeated peoples.

This is the key to understanding the vocabulary of the seventh beatitude. Peacemakers are those who participate in bringing about God’s rule over others. That they are called sons of God is symptomatic of the way those who are part of God’s kingdom are given a name which suggests they are representatives of God to men (cf, Rev 2.17; 1QM 4.1-17). On another level, Gesenius makes the observation that to be called something is often another way of saying what something is (e.g., saying that Jerusalem shall be called the city of righteous [Is 1.26] is another way of saying that Jerusalem is righteous) ([1847] 1979:740). Therefore, the words they shall be called the sons of God should be
understood as *they will be sons of God*. This suggests not only submission to God but authority and privilege from God.

II.9.2 Reconstruction of this Beatitude into Aramaic and Hebrew

II.9.2.1 Reconstructing εἰρηνοποιός

The word εἰρηνοποιός is a verbal adjective, typical in Hellenistic Greek (Betz 1995:137). This word is especially associated with royal appellations (Betz 1995:138). For instance, Εἰρηνοποιός τῆς οίκουμένης (Dio Cassius 72.15.5) is a royal title. Interestingly, it finds its way into the writings of Philo as a designation for God (Spec leg 2.192).

Strack and Billerbeck (1926:215) suggest several idioms as possible antecedents for the Greek word εἰρηνοποιός: ~wlv hfw[. ~wlv lyjm or ~wlv ~yfm. It is the first option which is the most natural and which must be used in a reconstruction.

The fact that very early Christian literature shied away from using εἰρηνοποιός (Betz 1995:137) is telling. Perhaps Jewish Christians whose first language was either Hebrew or Aramaic preferred wording closer to the idiom they were used to. Thus, though the verb εἰρηνοποιέω is found in Colossians 1.20, the verbal composite ποιοῦν εἰρήνην could just as easily be employed (e.g., Ja 3.18; Ep 2.15). Thus, in both Matthew 5.9, James 3.18 and Ephesians 2.15 making peace represents the Hebrew idiom ~Alv' hfl[; in Aramaic, am'llv. db;]. As if to confirm this, we find the verb εἰρηνοποιέω in the Greek versions of Aquila, Symmachus and Theodotion in Isaiah 27.5 (Arndt & Gingrich 1952:227) as a translation of the Hebrew idiom ~Alv' hfl[. 

The plural form εἰρηνοποιοί should be seen as synonymous with the ποιοῦν εἰρήνην of James 3.18. In turn, it should be understood that James is referring to the seventh beatitude. At the same time, it is apparent that James is unacquainted with this beatitude in Greek and so chooses to use the words ποιοῦν εἰρήνην as a direct translation of ~Alv' yfeA[. 

---

387 *ruler of the inhabitable world*
II.9.2.2 Reconstructing κληθήσονται

The term *called* is most likely to be reconstructed, in both Hebrew and Aramaic, using the root *arq*. Burney (1925:166) reconstructed κληθήσονται into Aramaic as *yitkîrôn*.\(^\text{388}\)

The idiom *to be called* (from *ar'q*.), in Aramaic, is conveyed in rabbinic literature only by the *Ithpe'al* construction (Jastrow [1903] 1992:1418).

Hebrew has several options for rendering *being called*: The *Pu'al*, the *Niphal* and *Qal* passive of the verb *ar'q*, are all used, even in Mishnaic Hebrew, to express *called* (Jastrow [1903] 1992:1417-1418). The choice for the reconstruction of this beatitude in Hebrew is based on the analogy (and possible allusion to) Isaiah 61.6, in which one can find the second person, *Niphal*, imperfect form: WarEQ'Ti.

The *Niphal* used in the context of people being called *sons of God* occurs in a beatitude-like saying attributed to Rabbi Akiba in *Avoth* 3.18: ~AqM'l; ~ynlB' War&q.Nlv, laer'f.yl ~ybiybix\(^\text{389}\) (Singer 1962:262-263). This passage goes on to suggest that the origin of the people of God being called *sons of God* goes back to Deuteronomy 14.1a, which reads: ~k,yheOla/ hwhyl; ~T,a; ~ynlB'.\(^\text{389}\)

Other verses indicating that the Israelites are God’s children include: Dt 32.5, 20; Is 1.2, 4; 30.1, 9; Ps 82.6; Je 3.14, 22; 4.22; 31.20 Ho 2.1.\(^\text{390}\)

---

\(^{388}\) *Arq.t.yl*  
\(^{389}\) *You are the children of the LORD your God.*  
\(^{390}\) Hosea 2.1 (English: 1.9) speaks of *yx'-lae ynEB*. [suns of the living God (NIV)] as a future designation for Israel. It also shows that a possible antecedent for κληθήσονται in Aramaic could be rm;a\(\text{-alt.yl}\). Where the Hebrew text says: *yx'-lae ynEB*. ~h,l' rmea'yE [it will be said of them: sons of the living God], the Septuagint has κληθήσονται υἱοί θεοῦ ζώντος. The Hebrew words ~h,l' rmea'yE are, of course a possibility in a Hebrew reconstruction but a Mishnaic Hebrew speaker may have found them too awkward to use. [Later Hebrew speakers preferred to use the plural participle ~yarI\(\text{Aq}\). Thus, in the Rabbinic Bible, Eben Ezra interprets the words ~h,l' rmea'yE from Hosea 2.1 as NOWS NJAYFX (cf, the way yli ~yarI\(\text{Aq}\) is employed in Modern Hebrew to mean my name is). Targum
There is a problem reconstructing the apodosis into Hebrew in terms of the three-beat rhythm criterion. If, as with all the former beatitudes having an apodosis with ὁτι αὐτοί, the reconstruction begins with ~h,v, then the term sons of God needs to be reconstructed in an idiom which only has one beat. It seems to be impossible to get a term in Hebrew for sons of God meeting this one-beat imperative. The biblical designations all have at least two beats: ~yhiOla/h' ynEB. (Ge 6.4, Jb 1.6, 2.1), ~yhiOla/ynEB. (Jb 38.7), ~yliae ynEB. (Ps 29.1, 89.7), yx'-lae ynEB. (Ho 2.1), !Ayl.[, ynEB. (Ps 82.6). The only way out of the situation is to forego using ~h,v, in the reconstruction. Using the analogy of Rabbi Akiba’s words in Avoth 3.18 the Hebrew reconstruction of the apodosis will read: ~yhiOla/-ynEB. WarEQ'yIv,.

Jonathan translates with !Ahl. rm;at.yI. The way this mirrors the use of rm;at.yI in 4Q246 2.1 gives a certain amount of room for this as a possibility.
The same problem is also felt in Aramaic. The translator of the Christian Palestinian version tries to balance the beatitude by adding a word in the first hemistich to give each hemistich four beats: \( \text{nwrQtY } \text{hL)d yNB nwNhd } \text{MLYS } \text{oYdB(d oYLh nwhYBw+} \) \( 391 \) (Lewis & Gibson [1899] 1971:62). Burney’s reconstruction of the apodosis is \text{dayitkerón benôy delaha}. \( 392 \) It may be possible in Aramaic to find an idiom meaning \text{sons of God} having only one beat but to avoid inventing an idiom that has no analogies Burney’s reconstruction will be accepted. \( 393 \) All the ancient Aramaic versions agree on using the relative pronoun, expressing the genitive, before the word \text{God} (thus, \( \text{hL)d} \) \( 394 \)). The Old Syriac and Peshitta agree on adding the anticipative pronominal suffix to the word \text{sons} (thus, \( \text{yhwNB} \) \( 395 \)). That, stylistically, an anticipative pronominal suffix before the word \text{God} sounded better to Aramaic speakers in the first century one need only look again at \text{la yd hrb} in 4Q246 2.1. \( 396 \)

### II.9.2.3 Hebrew and Aramaic Reconstructions

**Aramaic**

\( \text{ah'l'a/D< yhiAnBi !Arq.t.ylD> am'I'v. !ydlb.[] !AhybeWj} \)

**Hebrew**

\( \sim yhiOla/-ynEB. \text{WarEQ'ylv, } \sim \text{Alv' yfeA[ yrEv.a;} \)

\( 391 \) !wrqty ahlad ynb !wnhd amlyv !ydb[d !ylh !whybwj

\( 392 \) ah'I'a/D< yhiAnb. !Arq.t.ylD>

\( 393 \) Biblical Aramaic is too scanty to help much. However, in Ezra 6.16 we find \text{at'Wlg"-ynEB.} \) having only one beat.

\( 394 \) ahlad

\( 395 \) \text{yhwnb}: \) The Peshitta actually reads: \( \text{yhwnb} \) [\( \text{yhwbnb} \)].

\( 396 \) In opposition to this stands \( \text{lyhil'a/-rB}; \) in Daniel 3.25.
II.9.3 What Does This Beatitude Mean?

II.9.3.1 Being a Peacemaker

The fact that εἰρηνοποιέω goes back to the words ~Alv' yfeA or am'I\'v. !yd\'} does not limit the use of other idioms for producing peace from giving guidance on how to understand this beatitude. For instance, consider the different ways Berachot 64a uses to express imparting peace. One can bless another with peace by saying: l. br" ~Alv', ~Alv'-yhiy>, %B' ~Alv' aN"-hr"B.d:a], and ~AlV'b; AM[;ta, %rEb'y> yy. Those employing these blessings on others increase peace in this world.

That God makes peace is certainly a part of ancient Jewish tradition. Numbers Rabba 13.16 declares that God twmwlv ynv hfw[.398 peace above and peace below (Jastrow [1903] 1992:1579). This ancient understanding is confirmed in the Kaddish (a Jewish prayer in Hebrew and Aramaic which goes back to the time of Jesus (Jeremias 1971:198). It closes in Hebrew with the words ~Alv' hf,[\' y: wym'\x]:r:B. aWh wym'Arm.Bi ~Alv' hf,[o laer'f.yl-\x'-\x';\w> Wnyle[ (Singer 1962:16). This background may be what allows Paul to stretch his allusion to Isaiah 57.19 in Colossians 1.20 and assert that God was dwelling in Christ: ὁ ἄνωθεν κατατάσσει τὰ πάντα εἰς αὐτόν, εἰρηνοποιήσας διὰ τοῦ ἀἵματος τοῦ σταυροῦ, ὁ ἀὐτοῦ εἴτε τὰ ἐπὶ γῆς εἴτε τὰ ἐν τοῖς οὐρανοῖς.400

II.9.3.1.1 Midrash on Love: A Commentary on this Beatitude in Hebrew

Matthew 5.43-48 originally formed part of Jesus’ comments on the beatitude for the merciful. OMatthew has edited these verses so that it provides commentary on the beatitudes for the peacemakers and the persecuted (see §II.7.4.1.1). He has understood

397 ~Alv' ~yBir>m;
398 makes two (types of) peace
399 The one making peace in his heights, he in his mercies will make peace upon us and upon all Israel.
400 through him to reconcile to himself all things, whether things on earth or things in heaven, by making peace through his blood, shed on the cross (NIV).
Jesus’ comments interpreting the *lex talionis* and loving one’s enemies as a practical application of this beatitude. This includes prayer. Thus, those who love their enemies and pray for those who persecute them will be sons of their Father in heaven (Mt 5.45).

II.9.3.1.2 Midrash on Murder: A Commentary on this Beatitude in Aramaic

OMatthew interpreted the term peacemaker in a moral sense, not an apocalyptic sense. The original Aramaic beatitude was given a much different interpretation than the Hebrew one. The original application Jesus made to this beatitude is to be gleaned out of the midrash on Murder in Matthew 5.21-26. Reconciliation is given an urgency based on the threat of Hell (which was only used in this section of the commentary).

The example Jesus gives of leaving one’s gifts (in this context: *peace offerings*) by the altar in order first to be reconciled with a brother may be based on ancient teaching on making *peace offerings*. The Sifra VaYikra (par 13, ch 16) makes a pun on ~yml'v.,

saying: ~ymlX aybm ~lx awhX ym. This wholeness is in contrast to being !n"Aa [Jastrow: mourner ([1903] 1992:85, 1586)]. Thus, the !n"Aa was prohibited from coming to offer peace offerings. The word !n"Aa was not only used for someone mourning the death of someone but also for someone who felt wronged by another. It is this person Jesus has in mind when he speaks of ὁ ἀδελφός σοῦ ἐξετάζει τι κατά σοῦ. Certainly, such a person could take another to court for redress of payment in the manner Matthew 5.25-26 describes (yB Mets 4.9d).

To paraphrase: If you are busy making a peace offering at the Temple and remember that your brother feels wronged by you, leave your gifts by the altar. Go and make peace with him first. This will allow him to be whole (at peace) and then also come and offer a peace offering and you will have truly been a peace maker.

401 Mt 5.29-30 has been added, taken from 18.8-9.
402 *peace offerings*
403 He who is whole may bring peace offerings.
404 your brother who has something against you
405 It may be that Mt 5.25-26 has been injected into this passage from another context; see §II.7.4.1.b.3.
Rabbi Eliezer ben Jose the Galilean (c 150) described Aaron as one who loved peace, pursued peace and made peace between a man and his fellow (tSan 1.2). The understanding of making peace as reconciliation is quite common in Talmudic literature. Paul, as already quoted, equates peacemaking with reconciliation to God. But, he also understands the horizontal nature of reconciliation and seeks to establish that the basis for the unity of the Church (both Jewish and Gentile) comes from the reconciling work of the cross. He combines the reconciliation of man to man as well as man to God in Christ’s role as peacemaker who removes the dividing wall of hostility in Ephesians 2.11-22. In verses 17-18 he says, He came and preached peace to you who were far away and peace to those who were near. For through him we both have access to the Father by one Spirit (NIV). Though he does not refer to believers as peacemakers he certainly suggests that their role is one of reconciling men to God.

II.9.3.2 What it Means to be a Son of God
The words of Rabbi Akiba in Avoth 3.18, mentioned earlier, give evidence that being sons of God entailed being greatly loved by God. He first says: War>q.Nlv, laer'f.yl ~ybiybix] ~AqM'I; ~ynlB' (Singer 1962:262-263). He then reiterates this again saying: hB'xi ~AqM'I; ~ynlB' War>q.Nlv, ~h,l' t[j;:An hr"tey> (Singer 1962:263).

---

406 Beloved are Israel because they are called sons of God (The use of the word ~Aqm' [place] is a common rabbinic circumlocution for God.).

407 Through an extraordinary love it was made known to them that they were called sons of God.
The use of the term *sons of God*, as a designation won for themselves by righteous people during their sojourn on earth is striking in the Apocrypha. Wisdom 2.10-20 is an interesting passage in which the wicked reason about oppressing the *righteous man who is poor*.408 Verse thirteen says that *a son of the Lord he calls himself.*409 The Peshitta, significantly, has instead: *he says in himself that I am a son of God.*410

Wisdom 2.16 goes on to make the beatitude-like statement that *he declares blessed the end of the righteous and boasts of having God for his father.*411 Most instructive is the conclusion the wicked draw in verse eighteen: *if the virtuous man is God’s son, God will take his part and rescue him from the clutches of his enemies* (JB).412 This suggests that part of the point of the peacemakers being called sons of God is that there is an inherent promise that God will manifest his power on their behalf. Similarly, when recounting the exodus from Egypt, Wisdom 18.13 says that divine intervention on Israel’s behalf caused the Egyptians to acknowledge Israel to be God’s son.

The book of Wisdom also equates the righteous *sons of God* with the saints. In chapter five the unrighteous face the final judgement whereupon they see the righteous man with God. In surprise, they ask (vs 5): *how is he counted among the sons of God and (how) is his inheritance among the saints?*413 This immediately brings to mind the inheritance the saints of the Most High will receive in Daniel 7.18, 27 and, indeed, it is not unlikely that Daniel’s words were at least in the back of the writer’s mind here.

II.9.3.3 James 3.18: Commentary on the Seventh Beatitude

James 3.18 is likely an allusion to this beatitude. As stated earlier, the words ποιουσιν εἰρήνην seem to suggest that James does not know this beatitude in Greek and is translating from a Hebrew beatitude. Examining James 3.18 as a reference to the seventh
beatitude may mean that the understanding of this verse, as reflected in various Bible translations, must be revised. Observe:

καρπὸς δὲ τῆς δικαιοσύνης ἐν εἰρήνῃ σπέιρεται τοῖς ποιοῦσιν εἰρήνην.

KJV: And the fruit of righteousness is sown in peace of them that make peace.

NIV: Peacemakers who sow in peace raise a harvest of righteousness.

The dative, neuter participle τοῖς ποιοῦσιν can be understood several ways. The NIV and the KJV understand the case here in an instrumental sense. If one were to see this as a reference to the seventh beatitude then the translation would be more like: But the harvest (fruit) of righteousness in peace is sown for the peacemakers. The idiom καρπὸς δικαιοσύνης is a reference to salvation and was likely influenced by Proverbs 11.30 which likens the fruit of the righteous to a tree of life. This line comes at the end of a passage in which James is contrasting the wisdom that is earthly with that which is heavenly. By ending this way James is, in effect, saying that those who follow the heavenly wisdom are the peacemakers of the seventh beatitude since they will be emulating God’s attributes (thus, proving to be sons of God) and will inherit the kingdom of heaven (cf, Ph 1.11).

The addition to καρπὸς δικαιοσύνης of the words ἐν εἰρήνῃ, should not be understood to mean that the sowing is in peace but that the harvest of righteousness is in peace. This would correspond well with the idiom καρπὸς εἰρηνικὸς δικαιοσύνης found in Hebrews 12.11:

πᾶσα δὲ παιδεία πρὸς μὲν τὸ παρὸν οὐ δοκεῖ χαρᾶς εἶναι, ἀλλὰ λύπης· ὑστερον δὲ καρπὸν εἰρηνικὸν τοῖς δι’ αὐτῆς γεγυμνασμένοις ἀποδίδωσιν δικαιοσύνης.

No discipline seems pleasant at the time, but painful. Later on, however, it produces a harvest of righteousness and peace for those who have been trained by it (NIV).

Just as the καρπὸς of James 3.18 is related to the ποιοῦσα εἰρήνην by the dative case, so the καρπὸς of Hebrews 12.11 is related to the γεγυμνασμένοι by the dative case. In each

414 the peaceful fruit of righteousness
instance the dative case should be understood as indicating its noun as a recipient of the καρπός.

II.9.3.4 Hebrews 12.11: Commentary on the Seventh Beatitude

Hebrews 12.11 may also have the seventh beatitude in mind. It caps a section on how God treats those who are his sons. The peaceful harvest of righteousness is said to be awarded to these sons of God. This brings up an aspect of being called sons of God not previously mentioned. The use of this idiom in 4Q246 2.1 confirms that the name one receives is, in some measure, a name which has been won. Indeed, this is the basis that the writer of the book of Hebrews uses to show that the name of Jesus is superior to the names of angels (He 1.2-4). Therefore, it would not be out of line to say that by being peacemakers, by participating in bringing this world into submission to God, the people of God win for themselves the right to be considered sons of God (cf, Re 1.15-18; 12.11).

II.9.3.5 How is this Beatitude to be Understood?

The question has been asked (Newman & Stine 1988:116): Who are the peacemakers spoken of in this verse? Are they people who make peace between man and God or between man and man? The research in this thesis indicates that both answers are true. The application Jesus gave to this beatitude of making peace with a brother before offering a sacrifice may be stretched to include both interpretations. As mentioned above, only those who were ~lev' [whole] could offer sacrifice before the Lord. By making peace with the estranged brother he then becomes whole and is able to make peace with God as well.

To impose on being called sons of God a christological meaning is to obscure the more natural emphasis which was on being the people or the saints of God. Though this certainly had eternal implications there would have been an implicit understanding that God is ready to intervene in the lives of men on earth. It is not only for the next life that peacemakers are to be called sons of God.
Chapter Ten

Blessed are those who are persecuted because of righteousness,
for theirs is the kingdom of heaven

Matthew 5.10: μακάριοι οί δειδωμένοι ἐνεκέν δικαιοσύνης, ὅτι ἄντων ἐστιν ἡ βασιλεία τῶν οὐρανῶν

II.10.1 Reconstructing this Beatitude in Aramaic and Hebrew

The good news about this beatitude is that half of the job of reconstructing it is already done for us. The fact that both the first and the eighth beatitudes end with the same apodosis confirms that they are meant to enclose the corpus (Goulder 1974:186). It also means that the same reconstructions given for the words in the first beatitude will also be used here.

Hebrew

~yim;V'h; tWkl.m; ~h,l.v,

Aramaic

aY'm;v.di at'Wkl.m; !Ahd>DI

II.10.1.1 Reconstructing ἐνεκέν

Burney’s reconstruction of the first hemistich is ἱλουηίν διρδήπην βεγέν δεσίδκια (1925:166). His use of !ygIB. to represent ἐνεκέν is not matched by any of the Syriac versions (which all use ܠ+ܡ) or the Christian Palestinian version which uses ܠܝܕܐ. His choice may possibly represent a more Palestinian word than that of the Christian Palestinian version.

415 aq'd>ciD> !ygIB. !ypidlr>DI !AhybeWj
416 ljm
417 lydbl
To illustrate, in Genesis 12.13 the Hebrew word ![m;l] is translated in Targum Onkelos (representing a more Babylonian tradition) as lydIB. and by (the more Palestinian) Targum Pseudo-Jonathan as !ygIB.

The biggest problem with all of these options is that to maintain the three-beat rhythm there is no room for a hemistich with four words, each one receiving one beat. Burney, of course, sees the problem and addresses it: “It is only when we reach no. 8 that we are faced by a somewhat unwieldy line of four stresses; and the possibility suggests itself that this may originally have run thubehón deradphín lesüdkiá dedilehón malkutá dišmayá” (1925:168). The suggestion that ēvekev δικαλοσύνης goes back to aq'd>cil. seems, in light of the rhythmic pattern so far proved consistent, to be a much better suggestion. Burney suggests that the original beatitude was addressed to those who pursue righteousness and that the ![prefix] prefix was “misunderstood in the sense ‘for,’” causing the active participle !ypid>r" [pursue] to be understood as !ypidlr> (1925:168). This begs the question: how likely is it that native Aramaic speakers would misunderstand Aramaic grammar?

II.10.1.1.1 A Case of Misunderstanding ![prefix]

The answer to the question above is that such things do occur. An excellent case in point was uncovered while doing research for this thesis. It began with the search for a Hebrew equivalent of ēvekev δικαλοσύνης. In Isaiah 42.21 the term Aqদ-ci ![m;l]. [for his righteousness’ sake] occurs. This verse is first paraphrased and then quoted by the tannaitic rabbi, Chananya son of Akashya, in Avoth 1.18. Examining this passage brought an interesting case of “misunderstanding” to light. Here is the quotation:

\[
\begin{align*}
tAwc.miW \ hr"AT \ ~h,l'r>hi \ %k'ypil. \ laer"f.yl-ta, \ tAKz:l. & \\
aWh \ %WrB' \ vAdQ'h; \ hc'r" \ ryDla.y:w> \ hr"AT \ lyDlg>y: & \\
Aqদ-ci ![m;l]. \ #pex; \ yy \ rm;a/N<v, \ (Singer \ 1962:254). & 
\end{align*}
\]

418 pursued, persecuted
The Holy One, blessed be he, was pleased to purify Israel. Therefore, he increased the Torah and the commandments to them, as it is said: the LORD, for his righteousness’ sake, delighted to magnify and glorify the Torah.

The quotation is exactly as the verse appears in the Masoretic Text, except for the stylistic change of the Tetragrammaton to yy. The Targum translates Isaiah 42.21 as:

!Aht.y: @yqet.y:w> hytey>r:Aa ydEb.[l. yBer:w> laer"f.yl
HyteWaK'z:l. lydIB. y[er" yy

The LORD was pleased on account of justifying Israel and he magnified the servants of his Law and he will strengthen them.

A quick comparison of the vocabulary of the Hebrew verse with the Targum and the Hebrew paraphrase of Rabbi Chananya reveals a journey of misinterpretation and reapplication of Isaiah 42.21.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Hebrew</th>
<th>Targum</th>
<th>Chananya</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>#pex;</td>
<td>y[er&quot;</td>
<td>hc'r&quot;419</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>![;m;l.</td>
<td>lydIB.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Aqd&gt;ci</td>
<td>HyteWaK'z:l.</td>
<td>tAKz:l.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>laer&quot;f.yl</td>
<td>laer&quot;f.yl-ta,</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>%k'ypil.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>lyDla.y:w&gt;</td>
<td>yBer:</td>
<td>hB'r&gt;hi ydEb.[l. ~h,l'</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>hr&quot;AT</td>
<td>hytey&gt;r:Aa</td>
<td>tAvc.miW hr&quot;AT</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>ryDla.y:w&gt;</td>
<td>@yqet.y:w&gt;</td>
<td>!Aht.y:</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

419 This is also in line with Mtzudat Tzion commentary in the margin of the Rabbinic Bible which comments that PFWY PJQ$ VUH [lwcr lyn[ #px].
It is clear that though Chananya’s words are preserved in Hebrew, either he was thinking in Aramaic or these words have been translated from Aramaic, for his interpretation of Isaiah 42.21 is according to a modified version of what appears in the Targum. The Targum itself represents the second stage (at least) of Aramaic rendering of the Hebrew text. What is unclear is whether or not the changes made were based on misunderstanding or deliberate theological reinterpretation.

Rabbi Chananya’s paraphrase is notable for the way it uses laer"f.yl-ta, tAKz:l. to paraphrase Aqd>ci. Let us examine this phrase in more detail. As it stands Rabbi Chananya’s paraphrase doesn’t seem to be saying the same thing as Isaiah 42.21. As an interpretation of that verse it only really makes sense when one sees it next to Targum Jonathan’s translation: laer"f.yl HyteWaK'z:l..

It seems clear what has happened. The words Aqd>ci ![;m;l. were translated into Aramaic as HyteWaK'z:l. lydIB. The form HyteWaK'z: can also mean justifying him. It was a short jump to take the word his to be in reference to Israel rather than to God. At this point the possessive pronominal suffix was taken to be an anticipative pronominal suffix and, for clarification, laer"f.yl [Israel] was subsequently added.

\[420\] for his righteousness’ sake
\[421\] on account of his justifying
\[422\] This form can mean justifying himself as well. The Targum to Job (32.2) uses HyteWaK'z: with reference to Job’s justifying himself. (Heb: AqD>c;
\[423\] BM Or. 2211 reads: larXyd (Stenning 1949:143).
Codex Reuchlinianus gives evidence for what happened next. Its reading of this verse has \textit{larXyd hytwwkz lydb} [\textit{on account of Israel’s merit}] (Stenning 149:165). Through mistranscription HyteWaK’z:l. became: Hyteww:k.z:l.. 

The form \textit{hytwwkz} in Codex Reuchlinianus is missing the \textit{l}. prefix used to introduce the direct accusative. Perhaps one of the reasons this change was made was in reaction to those who read \textit{hytwwkzl} as HyteWKz>li, seeing the \textit{l}. prefix as a preposition introducing an infinitive of \textit{ykez}>. 

Perhaps lydIB. was considered to be misplaced, referring to hytey>r:Aa instead of HyteWaK’z:l.. This appears to be the interpretation that the community Rabbi Chananya belonged to must have had. Their targum tradition would have been: !Ahl. ayY”d:WQypiW at’yy>r:Aal. yBir: lydIb.W laer"f.yl HyteWkz>li y[er” yy. All of this does not prove Burney’s theory correct. It only means that it is viable and must be kept in mind.

\textbf{II.10.1.1.2 \textit{̀e}vēkev = li.: The Witness of the Hebrew Matthew of Shem Tov}

The Hebrew version of Matthew known to Shem Tov has used \textit{l}. in just the way Burney suggests for an Aramaic reconstruction. Its reading of the eighth beatitude is: \textit{yrva} \textit{~ymv twkI} \textit{~hlv qdcl} \textit{~ypdrnh}. Though Howard suggests (1995:178) that the origin of this version of Matthew ultimately goes back to the early church (certainly he does prove that it goes back hundreds of years earlier than Shem Tov), it is best to

\begin{itemize}
\item[424] Stenning (1949:xxi) understands the process to be the other way around, that \textit{Hyteww:k.z:} has, through mistranscription become HyteWaK’z:l.. 
\item[425] \textit{to justify, purify}
\item[426] This was a natural mistake as infinitive forms ending in \textit{tW} in the targums are often used with suffixes (Stevenson 1962:53).
\item[427] \textit{The LORD was pleased to justify Israel. And therefore, he increased the Law and the commandments to them.}
\end{itemize}
view the use of 1 here as a legitimate recognition by a Jewish scribe of how ἐνεκὲν should be rendered in a Hebrew version of this beatitude.

Whether Shem Tov’s version represents excellent guesswork or reflects access to an ancient Hebrew Matthew tradition the reading he gives (with one minor change) will be used in this thesis as the basis for the Hebrew reconstruction of this beatitude. The only change is to substitute hq’d”c. for qd<ç. The motivation for this will be given later.

II.10.1.2 Reconstructing δικαίωσύνης

As Shem Tov suggests, a Hebrew version would use qd<ç, or hq’d”c.. This brings up the question, just what Aramaic word stands behind δικαίωσύνης? A variety of possibilities is attested by those who would put this beatitude into Aramaic, both in ancient and in modern times.

Burney’s reconstruction employs the word used in the Christian Palestinian version of this beatitude, aq'd>ci. The Jewish Aramaic equivalent of the Old Syriac and Harclean versions would be at'Wqd>ci. The Peshitta uses /locale 429 which corresponds to the Jewish Aramaic aT'n>w:yKe. To this list should also be added at'WaK'z: from the Targum to Isaiah 42.21.

---

428 \text{corresponds to the Targum to Isaiah 42.21.}
429 \text{from the Targum to Isaiah 42.21.}
None of these versions reflect what is probably the correct word to use in an Aramaic reconstruction: aj'v.Wq. The Targum to Isaiah clearly prefers to use the word aj'v.Wq to either aq'd>ci or at'Wqd>ci when translating the Hebrew word qd<c,. aT'n>w:yKe is never used to translate qd<c,. Though the Targum uses at'WaK'z: to translate qd<c, in verse 42 of Isaiah 42, it uses jAvq. in verse six.

Why is this important? It is because the word aj'v.Wq means not only righteousness but it also means truth (see §II.6.2.3). In the same way that Jesus exploits the way the Aramaic ~xer> has a broad enough semantic range to take in the meanings of both Hebrew ~x;r" and bh:a', so he uses the fact that aj'v.Wq can take in the meanings of both Hebrew qd<c, and tm,a, when he gives application to this beatitude (see §II.10.2).

The dual use of this word can be demonstrated, appropriately enough, from the Targum to Isaiah 61. The word aj'v.Wq is used (to translate qd<c,) in verse three. In verse eight, the similar jAvq. is found as a translation of tm,a/ [truth].

430 This can also be written jAvq.; Jastrow considers this to be two spellings of the same word ([1903] 1992:1429).
II.10.1.3 Reconstructing \( \delta\varepsilon\iota\omega\gamma\mu\varepsilon\nu\mathrm{o}\iota \)

One thing all the ancient Aramaic versions agree on is that the word \( \delta\varepsilon\iota\omega\gamma\mu\varepsilon\nu\mathrm{o}\iota \) should be rendered in Aramaic using the verb \( \&d'r> \). The Old Syriac, Harclean and Christian Palestinian versions use the passive participle \( oYPdr \).\(^{431}\) The Peshitta uses the passive form \( wPdrt \).\(^{432}\) Similarly, Shem Tov chooses to use the Hebrew equivalent \( @d'r'' \).\(^{433}\) Therefore, for both Hebrew and Aramaic the reconstruction of \( \delta\varepsilon\iota\omega\gamma\mu\varepsilon\nu\mathrm{o}\iota \) will employ the root \( @dr \).

A quick look at the Brown, Driver Briggs Hebrew Lexicon under the root \( @dr \) is instructive (1906:922-923). It reveals that there are several scriptures that combine the word righteousness with this verb. The two most important ones will be examined here.

II.10.1.3.1 An Allusion to Deuteronomy 16.20

The first is Deuteronomy 16.20. It reads:

\[
\begin{align*}
%l' & !tenO ^yh,Ola/ hwhy-rv,a] & #r<a'h'-ta, & T'v.r:y''w> \\
hy<x.Ti ![;m;l. @Dor>Ti qd<c, qd<c,
\end{align*}
\]

Righteousness, righteousness, you must pursue, thereby you will live and possess the land the LORD your God is giving you.

---

\(^{431}\) \( lypdr \): Two out of the three Christian Palestinian witnesses use the form \( oYPdr \) [\( lypdyr \)] (Lewis & Gibson 1989:62).

\(^{432}\) \( wpdrt \): Jastrow gives no examples of Jewish Aramaic using either the 'Ithpe’al or the 'Ithpa’el constructions for the verb \( @d:r> \) ([1903] 1992:1453), but \( @d\rty \) can be seen among the Dead Sea Scrolls (4Q521 1.3.1.).

\(^{433}\) It appears as a Niph ‘al plural participle, construct form: \( ypdrnh \).
The themes found in Deuteronomy 16.20 fit in well with the Beatitudes. If it were suggested that the command to pursue righteousness were changed to the statement you will be persecuted because of righteousness, the altering of the wording would bring out an eschatological interpretation very useful for a community experiencing persecution.\textsuperscript{434}

It would indicate that those formerly commanded to pursue righteousness are now in the present dispensation persecuted (pursued) because of righteousness and by staying true they thereby win the reward of eternal life; they inherit, not the land, but the kingdom of heaven.

The lack of direct allusion to the Pentateuch mitigates against Deuteronomy 16.20 being the sole inspiration of this beatitude. All along the allusions in the Beatitudes have either come from Isaiah 61 or another scripture from Isaiah used in conflation with Isaiah 61. So, the question is: is it possible to find an allusion from Isaiah that both fits this beatitude and could also be considered an allusion to Deuteronomy 16.20? This is a tough enough problem but to this must be added the criterion that such an allusion must also show that it has in some way been joined or linked with Isaiah 61 in ancient times.

II.10.1.3.2 An Allusion to Isaiah 51.1

A possible candidate which meets the criteria above is Isaiah 51.1. This verse reads:

\begin{verbatim}
Listen to me, you who pursue righteousness and seek the LORD: Look to the rock from which you were cut and to the quarry from which you were hewn (NIV).
\end{verbatim}

It is possible that the use of \textit{qd< c, yped>ro} by Isaiah is an allusion to Deuteronomy 16.20, but there is nothing in the context to prove it. Nonetheless, Deuteronomy 16.20 may have ‘hovered’ over this idiom in the minds of first-century Jews, thus allowing an allusion to Isaiah 51.1 to also be an allusion to Deuteronomy

\textsuperscript{434} That this beatitude was created for a community going through such crisis has been suggested (e.g., Derrett 1978:195).
Aside from an allusion to Deuteronomy 16.20, is there evidence that this chapter (particularly the mention of the qd<q, yped>ro in verse one) was linked by ancient Judaism with Isaiah 61? Like Isaiah 61, chapter 51 concerns the final consummation in which the salvation and judgement of God are both revealed.

II.10.1.3.2.a Evidence from 4Q298

Among the Dead Sea Scrolls, a definite allusion to Isaiah 51.1 can be seen in 4Q298. The text begins in a normal Hebrew script but after the address changes to a cryptic script (Eisenman & Wise 1992:165). The allusion to Isaiah 51.1 comes at the start of this cryptic script. It amounts to an enlargement and expansion of the first half of this verse.

\[
4Q298\ 1.1b-2
\]

\[
\text{bb}l\ \text{yXna}\ \text{lw[k}\ \text{yl\ wn}]yzah
\]

\[
yml\ w[|m|X\ !wma\ yXqbmw\ ylmb\ w[n]ybx\ qdc\ ypd[wrw]
\]

1. Listen to me all men of heart,
2. and those who pursue righteousness: understand my words! And those who seek Faith: hear my words!

\[435\] The first words of line one are: The words of the Maskil (Teacher) that he spoke to all the sons of Dawn (Eisenman & Wise 1992:165).
That speaking of the \textit{qd<, yped>ro} may also have brought to mind Deuteronomy 16.20 can be concluded by the fact that later in this text those termed \textit{tma yXna} \textsuperscript{436} are told, \textit{wpdr qdc} \textsuperscript{437} (4Q298 3.7). In addition, the third line on the first column (which is so fragmentary that very few whole words are found at all) has an admonition to \textit{obtain a long life} (Eisenman & Wise 1992:164), \textsuperscript{438} which fits nicely with Deuteronomy’s \textit{you will live}.

Finding an allusion to Isaiah 61 as well is not so easy. The remains of this text are extremely fragmentary, with very few complete lines. Yet, various words are found which might have been inspired by the vocabulary of Isaiah 61. \textsuperscript{439} Scholars have also found in this text indirect allusions to Isaiah 40.1-3 (Eisenman & Wise 1992:164) as well as Micah 6.8 (Wise et al 1999:295).

\textbf{II.10.1.3.2.b Other Evidence from Qumran}

One of the most important texts from among the Dead Sea Scrolls for comparison with the words of Jesus with regard to allusion to Isaiah 61 is 4Q521. This work has been mentioned several times in this thesis. Yet again there may be help for seeing what other scriptures were joined to or conflated with Isaiah 61. In fragment 1, column 3, line 1 appear the words: \textit{~twa rta @drty qwx taw}. \textsuperscript{440} There is no way to prove this is an allusion to either Deuteronomy 16.20 or Isaiah 55.1.

\textsuperscript{436} \textit{men of truth}
\textsuperscript{437} \textit{pursue righteousness}
\textsuperscript{438} The reconstruction of these words presented by Eisenman & Wise is: \textit{~yyx \{\text{rwa w}\}gyXh} (1992:164).
\textsuperscript{439} \textit{e.g., wn\{[poor]\} (3.8 cf, Is 61.1); jpXm [\textit{justice}] (3.8, cf, Is 61.8); rp\{[dust]\} (2.4, cf, Is 61.3 [\textit{rpa: ashes}]).}
\textsuperscript{440} \textit{… and Law will be pursued. I will release them.}
Aramaic portions of the Dead Sea Scrolls seem to have also used Isaiah 55.1. In 4Q541 fragment 2, column 2, line eight are the words hl y[bw hl @dr (Eisenman & Wise 1992:144).

II.10.1.4 qd<c, yped>ro = aj’v.Wq ypeydlr>

Knowing that there is precedent for the use of qd<c, yped>ro as an allusion to Isaiah 55.1 allows a certain amount of confidence to proceed. Targum Jonathan translates Isaiah 51.1’s qd<c, yped>ro as aj’v.Wq ypeydlr>. In this Jonathan is being consistent with the targumic tradition surrounding Deuteronomy 16.20. Observe:

*Deuteronomy 16.20a:*

Hebrew: @Dor>Ti qd<c, qd<c,

Onkelos: @Dor>Ti aj’v.Wq aj’v.Wq

Neofiti: !ypdr !wwht ’jXwq ajXwq

Pseudo-Jonathan: @ydr yht jwXqb ~IX !ydw jwXq !yd

Thus, at no time do any of the targums suggest that it is aq’d>ci which must be pursued; it is consistently aj’v.Wq, and this becomes the basis for the reconstruction of this beatitude.

---

441 Pursue her and seek her. The object pursued may be righteousness or it may be wisdom (which has been mentioned in the previous line).

442 A judgement of righteousness (or: a true judgement) and a judgement of peace (or: a perfect judgement) in righteousness you will pursue.
In line with what Burney has suggested, the words *aj'v.Wq yped>r"*, forming an allusion to Targum Isaiah 51.1 have been changed into *aj'v.Wql. !ypiydIr>*. His supposition that a misunderstanding of the wording has resulted in a different message being given reminds one of the way Lachs, Schwarz and Black appealed to haplography to explain their theories of a change from *broken-hearted* to *the pure in heart* (see §II.8.1).

If one were committed to the idea that this beatitude arose from misinterpretation a likely enough possibility exists without having to resort to mispronunciations or haplography. For instance, theoretically it would have been possible to take the words *aj'v.Wql. !ypid>r"DI !AhbeWj* and interpret them to mean *Blessed are those whom they pursue because of righteousness*. In this context the active participle is better translated as a passive much like the word *!ymixjr:m*. was used in *Shabbat 151b* (see §II.7.3.2.1.4).

With all these possibilities in mind it still makes more sense to believe that a deliberate play on words has taken place. Stretching a word or allusion’s meaning to its limits was something Jewish theologians were very fond of doing.

---

443 Burney, of course, does not appeal to the wording in the Targum.
An example of this very kind of method can be seen in Paul’s statement that \( \kappa\alpha\tau\epsilon\pi\omicron\theta\eta \) \( \delta\theta\acute{\alpha}\nu\alpha\tau\omicron\sigma\zeta \varepsilon\iota\zeta \nu\iota\kappa\omicron \) \( [\text{death is swallowed up in victory}] \) (1Co 15.54). The verse he is quoting, Isaiah 25.8, actually says: \( \chi\zeta\zeta\omicron;\eta\zeta<^l\zeta \text{tw}<^L\zeta \mathcal{M}^h\zeta; \) \[L;Bi\].\footnote{He will swallow up death forever (NIV).} Paul, incidentally, is not being arbitrary in giving this active verb a passive meaning. The Targum translates \[L;Bi\] as \( \lambda\omega\nu\kappa\zeta>t.yl \).\footnote{will be forgotten} Theodotion reads \[L;Bi\] as \( \kappa\alpha\tau\epsilon\pi\omicron\theta\eta \), the same as Paul does.

The rather unique point about Paul’s reading is the way the Hebrew word \( \chi\zeta\zeta<^l\zeta \) [forever] has been understood in an Aramaic sense (i.e., \( \text{victory} \)).\footnote{Properly speaking, the Aramaic word for \textit{victory} is \( \lambda\chi'c.nl \).}

\( \Pi.10.1.5 \quad \text{aj'v.Wql. !ypid>r''} = \text{hq'd}"c.li ~ypiD:r>nl \)

As mentioned earlier, when this beatitude was translated into Hebrew the word chosen to convey the meaning \textit{righteousness} was \( \text{hq'd}"c. \), as opposed to \( \text{qd}<c. \). This can be demonstrated by the way \textit{OMatthew} has exploited the fact that of these two Hebrew words for \textit{righteousness}, only \( \text{hq'd}"c. \) also means \textit{almsgiving} (Jastrow [1903] 1992:1263). Commentary on a beatitude mentioning \textit{righteousness} is then used by \textit{OMatthew} as a segue into a discourse on \textit{almsgiving} (Mt 6.1-4). Matthew 6.1a says:

\[ \pi\rho\sigma\acute{\epsilon}\chi\epsilon\tau\acute{e} \tau\eta\nu \delta\acute{i}k\alpha\lambda\sigma\omicron\upsilon\eta\nu \upsilon\mu\omicron\upsilon \mu\upsilon \pi\omicron\lambda\epsilon\iota\nu \acute{\epsilon}\mu\pi\rho\omicron\omicron\sigma\sigma\epsilon\nu \tau\omicron\nu \acute{\alpha}n\theta\acute{r}\omicron\acute{w}p\omicron\upsilon\nu. \]

\textit{Be careful not to do your acts of righteousness before men} (NIV).

The transition from Matthew chapter five to chapter six is less abrupt when it is realized that \textit{OMatthew} is not changing the subject by presenting teaching on giving. Rather, this is a continuation of Jesus’ comments on the eighth beatitude, and concerns an aspect of \textit{righteousness}, or, more specifically, \( \text{hq'd}"c. \).
By choosing to use the word hq'd"c. rather than qd,c, the Hebrew version of the Beatitudes has lost its connection with the allusion to Isaiah 55.1 or Deuteronomy 16.20. It appears that the Hebrew speaking Church linked this beatitude to a different allusion: Proverbs 21.21. This verse says: dAbk\'w> hq'd"c. ~yYlx; ac\'m.yl ds,x\'w" hq'd"c. @dEro.447

II.10.1.6 Aramaic and Hebrew Reconstructions

**Aramaic**

aY\'m;v.dl at\'Wkl.m; !Ahd>Dl aj\'v.Wql. !ypiydIr>Dl !AhybeWj

**Hebrew**

~yim;V\'h; tWkl.m; ~h,l.v, hq'd"c.li ~ypid"r>nI yrEv.a;

II.10.2 The Meaning of This Beatitude

II.10.2.1 An Allusion to David

447 He who pursues righteousness and love finds life, prosperity and honour (NIV).
The concept of "pursuing those who are righteous" was often connected to the story of Saul and David. David asks Saul (1Sa 24.15):  \textit{@dEro hT'a; ymi yrEx[a];}.\textsuperscript{448} Saul also confesses to David (1Sa 24.18): \textit{yNIM,mi hT'a; qyDlc;}\textsuperscript{449} Combining both themes, \textit{Midrash Tehillim} to Psalm 58 quotes David as asking Saul and his men: \textit{yrxa} \textit{~tpdr qdcb.}\textsuperscript{450} Thus, David was considered to be an example of one who was \textit{persecuted for righteousness' sake.}

Ancient Judaism recognized that God cares for those who are persecuted. Perhaps it was the experience of persecution David received from Saul which prompted Ecclesiastes to say (Ec 3.15): \textit{@D"r>nI-ta, vQeb;y>}.\textsuperscript{451} Commenting on this verse, Leviticus Rabba s 27 says that the Lord always demands the blood of the persecuted from (the hands of) the persecutors.\textsuperscript{452} Similarly, Sanhedrin 72b suggests that God will save the life (blood) of the persecuted at the expense of the persecutor (Jastrow [1903] 1992:312).

With these references in mind it would not be out of line to say that it was common in ancient Judaism to use references to \textit{the persecuted} to speak of both the \textit{persecuted} as well as \textit{the persecutors} (and vice-versa). Mention of one brought to mind the other. Therefore it is not necessary to think that a beatitude alluding to Deuteronomy 16.20 (by way of Isaiah 55.1) needed to have an active participle. The scriptural sensibilities of the people were already programmed, in this case, to think of \textit{pursuing/persecuting} at the mention of \textit{pursued/persecuted}.

\textsuperscript{448} \textit{against whom are you pursuing/persecuting;} This comes out in the story of the conversion of Paul. Jesus appears to him as he is on his way to Damascus and says: \textit{Saul, Saul, why do you persecute me?} When Paul asks him who he is, he replies: \textit{I am Jesus whom you are persecuting.} In this last line Jesus appears to be quoting 1Sa 24.15.

\textsuperscript{449} \textit{you are more righteous than I am}

\textsuperscript{450} \textit{In righteousness did you persecute me?}

\textsuperscript{451} \textit{God cares for the persecuted (JB).}

\textsuperscript{452} \textit{!ypdwrh !m !ypdnh}
The promise of the kingdom of heaven is given to those who are persecuted for the sake of righteousness just as it was for the poor in spirit. This is not merely for literary style. Each beatitude has a promise in its apodosis which has been suggested by a certain logic. Perhaps the story of David and Saul has suggested this apodosis. 1 Samuel 24.21 says: For you will surely be king and the kingdom of Israel will be established in your hands. In this way the eighth beatitude has brought together the imagery of the saints receiving a kingdom in Daniel 7 and identified them with David. Jesus uses David as a type in his teaching on life, privilege and authority in the kingdom of heaven in Matthew 12.3-4.

II.10.2.2 Jesus’ Commentary on the Eighth Beatitude.

Goulder is undoubtedly correct in supposing that what have been thought by some (Betz 1995:109) to be two extra beatitudes (i.e., Mt 5.11-12) are, in reality, part of the explanation Jesus gives to the eighth beatitude (1974:280). Being persecuted ἐνεκὲν δικαιοσύνης is equated with being persecuted, and lied about ἐνεκέν ἐμοῦ. Jesus speaks, not of David, but of τοῖς προφήταις τοῖς πρὸ ὑμῶν. One reason for this may be to cause the disciples to infer that their commitment to Jesus may have come at the price of martyrdom. As opposed to David, who was not persecuted to death, some of the prophets were killed by their persecutors. Not the least of these was Isaiah who was popularly believed to have been sawn in half by Manasseh while he hid in a tree (cf, He 11.37).

That Jesus has addressed those who are aj’v.Wql. !ypidlr>DI rather than aq’d>cil. !ypidlr>DI is demonstrated by the fact that (as mentioned earlier) aj’v.Wq can mean either righteousness or truth (Jastrow [1903] 1992:1429). Thus, we see in the comments on this beatitude in Matthew 5.11-12 that the persecution to be expected includes people speaking falsely. The contrast is not only between δικαιοσύνη

453 For you will surely be king and the kingdom of Israel will be established in your hands.
454 In this passage Jesus is referring to David and his companions eating the shew-bread in 1Sa 21.1-6.
455 for the sake of righteousness
456 for my sake
457 the prophets who were persecuted before you (NIV)
and ποιημένος, but between δικαιοσύνη and ψευδόμενος. This brings out the dual meaning of aj'v. Wq. Luke, in the parallel passage (6.22-23, 26) contrasts the treatment given to the προφήται as opposed to the ψευδοπροφήται.

Jesus’ comments about salt and light (Mt 5.13-16) are also applied to the persecuted. The first (Mt 5.13) is an admonition to faithfulness despite the persecutions involved. The idea that those who fall away will not be able to be readmitted into the kingdom is suggested by the question asked, rhetorically: how will salt which has lost its flavour become salty again? Salt losing its saltiness is a figure known from other rabbinic passages. Thus, Bechoroth 8b says: hl yxlm yamb ayrs yk axlym [when salt becomes unsavoury, wherewith do they salt it?] (Jastrow [1903] 1992:788).

In 5.14 Jesus speaks to those who want to be secret disciples. The illogic of such a situation is brought out by the similes of a city on a hill being unable to be hidden (Mt 5.14) and the uselessness of a lamp put under a basket (Mt 5.15). Jesus ends by commanding them to let your light shine before men, that they may see your good deeds and praise your Father in heaven (NIV). This last clause, καὶ δοξάσωσιν τὸν πατέρα ὑμῶν τὸν ἐν τοῖς οὐρανοῖς, is a euphemism for they will repent (cf, Re 11.13). It represents the Hebrew idiom hwhy; dAbk' an"-~yfi found, for example, in Joshua 7.19, in which Joshua tells Achin to repent and confess his sin. This idiom is found throughout Jewish literature. Thus, for example, even in the Testament of Naphtali (8.1) we find: Do what is good, my children. Then men and angels will praise you and God will be honored among the heathen (Newman & Stine 1988:125).

A possible reference to the story of David and Saul may be lurking in the background here. This possibility should not be pressed too heavily but in 1 Samuel 26 David again spares Saul’s life, stealing his spear and water jug instead. When presented with this evidence of David’s good deeds Saul repents, saying, I have sinned.

II.10.2.3 OMatthew’s commentary on the Eighth Beatitude
For *OMatthew* the commentary Jesus gave on this beatitude found in 5.11-12 is more useful for another purpose. He has framed these verses to appear as beatitudes. Thus, 5.11 begins with μακάριοι and 5.12 has an apodosis beginning with ὡς. This helps *OMatthew* achieve his goal of presenting Jesus as the New Moses by having him give his own Ten Words on a mountain.

The verses *OMatthew* employs as commentary on this beatitude are Matthew 5.38-48. At the same time he uses this section as commentary on the seventh beatitude as well.

**II.10.2.3.1 Allusion to Psalm 34.15**

Why has *OMatthew* combined the seventh and eighth beatitudes together when he applies Jesus’ midrashic statements concerning various commandments to each of the last four beatitudes? Commentary ‘assigned’ to the beatitude for the *merciful* is separate from that ‘assigned’ to the beatitude for the *pure in heart*. Why are the beatitudes for the *peacemakers* and the *persecuted* combined? The answer begins with the recognition that *righteousness* is not the only thing the Old Testament commands to pursue. In Psalm 34.15 David says: Whped>r"w> ~Alv' vQeB; [seek peace and pursue it]. The imagery resident in the word *pursue* was (and is) striking and appears to have suggested to ancient people that they join the admonitions to *pursue righteousness* (Isaiah 51.1) with the command to *pursue peace* (Ps 34.15). An example of this can be seen in Targum Pseudo-Jonathan’s interesting variation of Deuteronomy 16.20a: @ydr yht jwXqb ~lX !ydw jwXq !yd.459 This reflects the fact that in popular preaching it was natural to conflate the command to *pursue righteousness* with the command to *pursue peace*.

In the same way, Shem Tov’s Hebrew Matthew cannot resist the opportunity for wordplay between the seventh and eighth beatitudes and therefore has given *blessed are the peacemakers* as ~wlv ypdwr, producing:

---

458 Lit.: Glorify your Father in heaven.

459 A judgement of righteousness and a judgement of peace in righteousness you will pursue.
This forms the background of why *OMatthew* has tailored Jesus’ *midrash* on the command to love one’s enemies in Matthew 5.43-48 (originally given to provide commentary on the fifth beatitude; see §II.7.4.1.a) to become commentary on both the seventh and eighth beatitudes together. For example, to make this *midrash* more applicable to the eighth beatitude *OMatthew* has inserted the words *pray for those who persecute you* after *love your enemies*.

**II.10.2.2.2 Allusion to Proverbs 21.21**

As mentioned earlier, the use of *hq'd"c.* in the Hebrew version of this beatitude brought to mind Proverbs 21.21: *dAbk'w> hq'd"c. ~yYlx; ac'm.yl ds,x'w" hq'd"c. @dEro.* By alluding to Proverbs 21.21, the Hebrew version of this beatitude is able to have *ds,x,* [mercy] resonating in the background. This allows the application of this beatitude in terms of Jesus’ *midrash* on the *lex talionis* (5.38-42) and the commandment to love one’s neighbour (5.43-48) to make much more sense. Going the extra mile and doing good to your persecutors is, for *OMatthew*, a product of *ds,x,*.

---

460 *He who pursues righteousness and love finds life, prosperity and honour* (NIV).
It is also this allusion to Proverbs 21.21 that has prompted Jesus’ teaching on giving to be joined to the commentary on this beatitude. Observe: Matthew 6.1 speaks of doing righteousness and 6.2 speaks of doing mercies. The former refers to the Hebrew word, hq’d”c. The latter does not refer to the Hebrew word for mercy used in the fifth beatitude, ~ymixjr:. Instead, it refers to ds,x,. Both hq’d”c. and ds,x, are commonly employed as idioms for almsgiving. The two idioms are almost (but not quite) synonymous. That Matthew 6.1-2 goes back to a Hebrew Urtext rather than an Aramaic one is brought out by the fact that all of the ancient Aramaic versions have trouble translating the Greek with two separate idioms. Observe:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Greek</th>
<th>Syr$^a$</th>
<th>Syr$^c$</th>
<th>Syr$^p$</th>
<th>Syr$^h$</th>
<th>CP</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>6.1 δικαιοσύνην</td>
<td>nKtwQYdz</td>
<td>nKtBhwM</td>
<td>nKtQdz</td>
<td>nKwM</td>
<td>nKQdc</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6.2 έλεημοσύνην</td>
<td>tQdz</td>
<td>tQdz</td>
<td>tQdz</td>
<td>tQdz</td>
<td>QYdc</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

The difference between doing righteousness (in the sense of almsgiving) and doing mercy is one of inner motivation. The latter springs from the heart. This is well illustrated by a statement in Succoth 49b: hbX dsx ypl rkXn hqdc !ya 462

Proverbs 21.21 speaks of two qualities but promises three rewards. In like manner, Matthew 6.1-3 uses two idioms for giving but promises rewards three times. One of the rewards promised in Proverbs 21.21 is honour [dAbK']. This one in particular is alluded to in Matthew 6.2 as Jesus condemns the actions of hypocrites who give publicly to be honoured by men 463 (NIV). That they are said to have received their reward means that they will not be honoured by God.

II.10.2.3 How is This Beatitude to be Understood?

This is one of the beatitudes which is not so much misunderstood as not fully understood. The lack of acquaintance with the allusions involved (particularly Dt 16.20) causes a

---

461 The Sinaitic Old Syriac (Syr$^a$), the Curetonian Syriac (Syr$^c$), the Peshitta (Syr$^p$), the Harclean Syriac (Syr$^h$), and the Christian Palestinian (CP).

462 righteousness (almsgiving) is only rewarded according to the mercy in it.

463 ὁποιος δοξασθὼσιν ὑπὸ τῶν ἀνθρώπων
failure to appreciate that being *persecuted for righteousness’ sake* is the result of *pursuing righteousness*. This goes beyond translations, such as Today’s English Version, where *for righteousness’ sake* is translated as *because they do what God requires*. This translation has correctly emphasized that in this context *righteousness* is related to right actions and godly living. But, a better grasp of the inherent play on words would be given by a translation such as: *for their pursuit of what God requires*.

To see in *are persecuted* a reference to suffering in general (Newman & Stine 1988:117) is to do a disservice to this beatitude. Because Jesus, in his comments on this beatitude equates being persecuted *for righteousness’ sake* with being persecuted *for his name’s sake* it is incumbent to stress the obvious meaning that the suffering involved is specifically in relation to obedience to Christ.
Chapter Eleven

Conclusion

There is very little in this thesis that can be said to be ‘proved’ one way or the other. For instance, though each beatitude has been able to be reconstructed in a form which exhibits the three-beat rhythm Burney advocated, it can not be said that his theory has been proven. The best that can be said is that it has been proven to be feasible.

In terms of the contributions this thesis can make in the field of Synoptic Studies the most important is that a good case can be made for the idea that Jesus gave the Beatitudes (as well as the rest of the Sermon on the Mount) in Aramaic and that these words were translated into Hebrew. The Hebrew tradition was an oral one. The pun James makes (Ja 2.5) between yrEv.a; [happy] and ryvi['] [rich] only works in an oral environment.

II.11.1 The Original Beatitudes

The Beatitudes as they have been reconstructed in this thesis into Aramaic appear like this:

\begin{verbatim}
Aramaic Reconstruction:

aY"m;v.Di at'Wkl.m; !Ahd>Dl aY"n"t;w}n>[i !AhybeWj .1
!Wmx]n:t.yl !Wnh]d. aY"l;bea] !AhybeWj .2
!y[ib.s' !Wwh.yl !WNhiD> !ynlypiK. Awh]D: !AhybeWj .4
!ymixjr:t.mi !WNhiD> !ynIm'x]r:D> !AhybeWj .5
ah'l'ale yAmx; !WNhiD> aB'li-yked>D> !AhybeWj .6
ah'l'a/D< yhiAnBi !Arq.t.yID> am'l'l'.!ydlb.]!AhybeWj .7
aY'm;v.di at'Wkl.m; !Ahl.dID> aj"v.Wql. !ypidIr>Dl
!AhybeWj .8
\end{verbatim}
The reasons for conjecturing that the original Beatitudes were in Aramaic are these:

1. The allusion to Isaiah is to the version of the Targum, not the Masoretic text.
2. The *midrash* of Jesus on loving one’s enemies was certainly commentary on the fifth beatitude (*the merciful*). It makes the most sense to suppose that both the beatitude and the *midrash* were in Aramaic because of the way ~xer> can be used, both for *mercy* and for *love*.
3. The commentary on the eighth beatitude, which speaks of others speaking falsely works best as an antithesis to aj’v.Wq, because of the fact that it can mean both *righteousness* and *truth*. In addition, the Hebrew version appears more as a translation from Aramaic rather than having been created in Hebrew, based on the use of hq’d”c. rather than qd<.c.

**II.11.1 Parallelism in the Original Beatitudes**

Commentators have often attempted to understand and explain the Beatitudes through parallelism. This works fine when the third beatitude (*the meek*) is switched with the second and is then considered as a parallel beatitude with the first, because of the fact that both can be connected to the word wn"[. Yet, it makes more sense to conjecture that the third beatitude was not a part of the original group. This would mean there were only seven original beatitudes. Though having an odd number parallelism was a feature all along.

The pairings are obvious. Beatitudes one and two are both allusions to Isaiah 61.1-2. Beatitudes four and five are both allusions to Isaiah 49.10. They both rhyme as well. Beatitudes six and seven both end with the word *God*. Both have allusions to priestly functions and connotations. In addition, it should be noted how ah'l'ale yAmx; also functionally rhymes with ah'l'a/D< yhiAnBi. The last beatitude is also to be seen in parallelism with the first, as they both have the same apodosis.

This study does not preclude the idea that further research will show that this was not the first stage but only a development of a previous one. In the meantime this will be
considered the basic group and wording from which all other stages of development derived.

II.11.2 Stage Two: The Hebrew Translation of the Beatitudes

For the benefit of a Jewish Church in Jerusalem (and later, elsewhere) the Sermon on the Mount was translated into Hebrew. The translation of the Beatitudes into Hebrew had a very significant impact on the way these words were understood. Though Hebrew (and Mishnaic Hebrew in particular) is very close to Jewish Palestinian Aramaic they do not overlap exactly. Though in truth, the only really major shift in meaning occurs with the fifth beatitude, the change in vocabulary does make a difference in the way the Beatitudes were seen as allusions.

The emphasis on Isaiah 61 is more subdued in the Hebrew version of the Beatitudes. Perhaps this reflects not so much the language as the culture of the church in which they were used. In their original setting they are a song of celebration, filled with apocalyptic expectation and imagery. As such, they find lots of analogous parallels among the Dead Sea Scrolls. In Hebrew they resemble more the wisdom sayings of the rabbinic schools, and, not surprisingly, they find lots of parallels among rabbinic literature. It may be thought that this is how James knew them.

*Hebrew Reconstruction:*

```plaintext
~yIm;V'h; tWkl.m; ~h,l.v, #r<a'h' ywEn>[; yrev.a; .1

Wmx'n<t.yl ~h,v. ~ylibea]h; yrev.a; .2

~y[iB.f Why> ~h,v, ~yaimec.W ~ybi[er> yrEv.a; .4

~ymix]Wrm. ~h,v, !ymix]r:m.h; yrEv.a; .5

~yhiOla/ ta, War>yl ~hev, bb'le yrEb' yrEv.a; .6

~yhiOla/-ynEB. WarEQ'ylv, ~Alv' yfeA[ yrEv.a; .7

~yim;V'h; tWkl.m; ~h,l.v, hq'd"c.li ~ypid"r>nI yrEv.a; .8
```

James has changed the first beatitude from being addressed to the *poor* to the *poor of the earth*. This is an allusion to Isaiah 11.4. It reflects James’ commitment to the ‘*am ha-
‘aretz. The addition of the word earth is important because it gives a poetic balance to the word heaven at the end of the second hemistich. This, in turn, frees the first beatitude from its relationship in parallelism with the second beatitude. Thus, the second can now be joined in parallelism with the fourth, the fifth with the sixth and the seventh with the eighth.

The original allusions are no longer considered so important. Of greater importance is the application to the Beatitudes of the midrashic statements on the Law that Jesus made.

It was at this point that the Beatitudes were translated into Greek. James incorporates the Greek version of the first beatitude in chapter two, verse five.

Reconstruction of the translation of the Hebrew Beatitudes into Greek:

1. μακάριοι οἱ πτωχοὶ τῷ κόσμῳ, ὅτι αὐτῶν ἐστιν ἡ βασιλεία τῶν οὐρανῶν.
2. μακάριοι οἱ πενθοῦντες, ὅτι αὐτοὶ παρακληθοῦνται.
3. μακάριοι οἱ πεινώντες καὶ δυσφθησάντες, ὅτι αὐτοὶ χορτασθήσονται.
4. μακάριοι οἱ εἰρημοσοῦντες, ὅτι αὐτοὶ νόμος τοῦ θεοῦ κληθοῦνται.
5. μακάριοι οἱ δουλευόμενοι ἐν δικαιοσύνῃ, ὅτι αὐτῶν ἐστιν ἡ βασιλεία τῶν οὐρανῶν.

As McEleny surmised (see §I.4.1), the Greek version of the Beatitudes incorporated into the Gospel of Matthew had a version of the fourth beatitude with the double address: those who hunger and thirst. The likelihood is that this reflects the Urtext beneath the Greek.

II.11.3 The Third Stage: The Hebrew Beatitudes of OMatthew

OMatthew is aware of the Hebrew version, but knows it either in a modified form or has himself modified that of James. When he is putting the Gospel of Matthew together he incorporates the Greek version of the Beatitudes which was already in use but modifies it according to the Hebrew version he has been using. Thus, he substitutes πνεῦματι for κόσμῳ. This might explain why the first beatitude reads οἱ πτωχοὶ τῷ πνεῦματι instead
A certain amount of editing in this Hebrew version has taken place. The third beatitude is now added and the address in the first beatitude is now changed to the poor in spirit. At this stage a full-scale attempt to modify the commentary on the beatitudes appears to have taken place. In doing so, certain ‘agendas’ were imposed. One of the most important was to present Jesus as the fulfillment of the prophecy of Deuteronomy 18.15, the New Moses. The third beatitude has less to do with either Isaiah 61.1 or Psalm 37.11 as it has to do with the fact that the word wn’['] is connected to Moses.

*O*Matthew’s version of the first beatitude is different from that of James. A couple of possibilities present themselves as to why. First, that the Hebrew oral tradition was somewhat fluid. James is alluding to Isaiah 11.4 while *O*Matthew is alluding to Isaiah 66.2. Neither destroys the meaning of the original, but each changes (or at least expands) the allusion to Isaiah 61.1. Another possibility is that by adding the third beatitude, which ends with earth, the balance to heaven no longer needed be part of the first hemistich. In addition, the new circumstances following 70 AD may have dictated the
change. In any event, the initial Greek translation is without the third beatitude, which was only included later by *RMatthew*.

**II.11.4 The Last Word**

As to the question: what difference does all this research make? In actual fact, the wording of the Beatitudes has gone through especially drastic changes. The conclusions drawn in this thesis could mostly have been gained even in the Greek text. The real value of the research leading to the reconstruction of this text into both Aramaic and Hebrew has been to see, first of all, how they originally made allusion to Isaiah 61. Here, this thesis has offered some new and exciting theories. Secondly, by connecting Jesus’ *midrash* on the Law to the Beatitudes, this research has been able to offer a valuable insight into the way the Beatitudes were meant to be understood used by Jesus and the way the Hebrew speaking church understood and used them as well.

Whenever the words of Jesus are reconstructed into Aramaic or Hebrew the chances are that the conclusions will be carried beyond the confines of the Greek text. To a minimal degree that can be said for the research presented here. However, one of the more subtle truths not fully explored in this thesis is the fact that the words of Jesus were not kept in a perfect state but could be given minor expansions and even bent towards other issues by the Apostles and Gospel writers. In so far as the Greek text represents the teaching of the Apostles and not that of Jesus then it is the former which must remain authoritative for the Church. It is one of the paradoxes of Church history that the early Church, through the office of the Bishop, felt the tremendous need to guard, not Jesus’, but the Apostles’ teachings. Thus, the differences between the Gospels in how they presented the words of Jesus were not so problematic that they could not resist what must have been a strong temptation to harmonize each of the Gospel records.

By coming closer to what would have been the original words and teachings of Jesus the hope is that a greater appreciation and insight for those words will be attained. Since none of the research in this thesis has resulted in conclusions which would nullify the existing text or give rise to doctrines not found elsewhere in scripture there should be no problem accepting the conclusions and interpretations offered.
The research and time spent with the Beatitudes each day has proven to be a great spiritual help. It would be impossible to do this research without one’s life being affected. Perhaps the most prominent of all the truths gained was greater insight into God’s heart for the poor. Interestingly, when this research began, one of the first books used was a copy of Plackal’s thesis (Plackal 1988). He dedicates this to the poor of this world. The Beatitudes were meant to be good news for the poor, as well as a challenge for Christians to humble themselves and become like them in order for the kingdom of heaven to operate in their lives. Hopefully nothing in this thesis detracts from that central message. To paraphrase Jesus:

_Blessed are those who read, study and live the Beatitudes,
for theirs is the kingdom of heaven._